




<http://stores.ebay.com/Ancestry-Found>

<http://stores.ebay.com/Ancestry-Found>







Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2011 with funding from  
LYRASIS members and Sloan Foundation



*Completed*

Vol. XVI

JULY, 1916

No. 1

# The North Carolina Booklet



## GREAT EVENTS IN NORTH CAROLINA HISTORY



PUBLISHED QUARTERLY  
BY  
THE NORTH CAROLINA SOCIETY  
DAUGHTERS OF THE REVOLUTION  
RALEIGH, N. C.

### CONTENTS

	PAGE.
William Alexander Graham -----	3
By CHIEF JUSTICE WALTER CLARK.	
James Cochran Dobbin -----	17
By HENRY ELLIOT SHEPHERD, M.A., LL.D.	
Selwyn -----	32
By VIOLET G. ALEXANDER.	
An Educational Practice in Colonial North Carolina---	39
By EDGAR W. KNIGHT.	
Biographical and Genealogical Memoranda-----	52
Genealogical Department -----	59

SINGLE NUMBERS 35 CENTS

\$1.00 THE YEAR

Entered at the Postoffice at Raleigh, N. C., July 15, 1905, under the Act of Congress of March 3, 1879.

*E*

# The North Carolina Booklet

## Great Events in North Carolina History

VOLUME XVI of THE BOOKLET will be issued quarterly by the North Carolina Society, Daughters of the Revolution, beginning July, 1916. THE BOOKLET will be published in July, October, January, and April. Price \$1.00 per year, 35 cents for single copy.

EDITOR:

MISS MARY HILLIARD HINTON.

BIOGRAPHICAL EDITOR:

MRS. E. E. MOFFITT.

### VOLUME XVI.

Isaac Shelby: Revolutionary Patriot and Border Hero—Dr. Archibald Henderson.

An Educational Practice in Colonial North Carolina—Edgar W. Knight.

George Selwyn—Miss Violet G. Alexander.

Martha McFarlane Bell, a Revolutionary Heroine—Miss Mary Hilliard Hinton.

North Carolinians in the President's Cabinet, Part III: William A. Graham—Chief Justice Walter Clark.

Historic Homes, Part VII: The Fountain, the Home of Colonel Davenport—Colonel Edmund Jones.

North Carolinians in the President's Cabinet, Part IV: James Cochran Dobbin—Dr. Henry Elliot Shepherd.

A History of Rowan County—Dr. Archibald Henderson.

Edgecombe County History and some of her Distinguished Sons—Mrs. John A. Weddell.

Historical Book Reviews will be contributed by Mrs. Nina Holland Covington. These will be reviews of the latest historical works written by North Carolinians.

The Genealogical Department will be continued, with a page devoted to Genealogical Queries and Answers as an aid to genealogical research in the State.

The North Carolina Society Colonial Dames of America will furnish copies of unpublished records for publication in THE BOOKLET.

Biographical Sketches will be continued under Mrs. E. E. Moffitt.

Old letters, heretofore unpublished, bearing on the Social Life of the different periods of North Carolina History, will appear hereafter in THE BOOKLET.

This list of subjects may be changed, as circumstances sometimes prevent the writers from keeping their engagements.

The histories of the separate counties will in the future be a special feature of THE BOOKLET. When necessary, an entire issue will be devoted to a paper on one county.

Parties who wish to renew their subscriptions to THE BOOKLET for Vol. XVI are requested to give notice at once.

Many numbers of Volumes I to XV for sale.

For particulars address

MISS MARY HILLIARD HINTON,

Editor North Carolina Booklet,

"Midway Plantation," Raleigh, N. C.

*The*  
**NORTH CAROLINA BOOKLET**

---

*"Carolina! Carolina! Heaven's blessings attend her!  
While we live we will cherish, protect and defend her!"*

---

Published by  
**THE NORTH CAROLINA SOCIETY**  
**DAUGHTERS OF THE REVOLUTION**

---

The object of THE BOOKLET is to aid in developing and preserving North Carolina History. The proceeds arising from its publication will be devoted to patriotic purposes.

EDITOR.

---

BALEIGH  
COMMERCIAL PRINTING COMPANY  
PRINTERS AND BINDEES

## ADVISORY BOARD OF THE NORTH CAROLINA BOOKLET

MRS. HUBERT HAYWOOD.

MRS. E. E. MOFFITT.

MR. R. D. W. CONNOR.

DR. D. H. HILL.

DR. WILLIAM K. BOYD.

CAPT. S. A. ASHE.

MISS ADELAIDE L. FRIES.

MISS MARTHA HELEN HAYWOOD.

DR. RICHARD DILLARD.

DR. KEMP P. BATTLE.

MR. JAMES SPRUNT.

MR. MARSHALL DELANCEY HAYWOOD

CHIEF JUSTICE WALTER CLARK.

MAJOR W. A. GRAHAM.

DR. CHARLES LEE SMITH.

EDITOR :

MISS MARY HILLIARD HINTON.

BIOGRAPHICAL EDITOR :

MRS. E. E. MOFFITT.

## OFFICERS OF THE NORTH CAROLINA SOCIETY DAUGHTERS OF THE REVOLUTION

1914-1916

REGENT :

MISS MARY HILLIARD HINTON.

VICE-REGENT :

MRS. MARSHALL WILLIAMS.

HONORARY REGENTS :

MRS. E. E. MOFFITT.

MRS. T. K. BRUNER.

RECORDING SECRETARY :

MRS. L. E. COVINGTON.

CORRESPONDING SECRETARY :

MRS. PAUL H. LEE.

TREASURER :

MRS. CHAS. LEE SMITH.

REGISTRAR :

MISS SARAH W. ASHE.

CUSTODIAN OF RELICS :

MRS. JOHN E. RAY.

## CHAPTER REGENTS

Bloomsbury Chapter-----Mrs. HUBERT HAYWOOD, Regent.

Penelope Barker Chapter-----Mrs. PATRICK MATTHEW, Regent.

Sir Walter Raleigh Chapter-----Mrs. I. M. MEEKINS, Regent.

General Francis Nash Chapter-----Miss REBECCA CAMERON, Regent.

Roanoke Chapter-----Mrs. F. M. ALLEN, Regent.

Mary Slocumb Chapter-----Miss GEORGIE HICKS, Regent.

FOUNDER OF THE NORTH CAROLINA SOCIETY AND REGENT 1896-1902 :

MRS. SPIER WHITAKER.\*

REGENT 1902 :

MRS. D. H. HILL, SR.†

REGENT 1902-1906 :

MRS. THOMAS K. BRUNER.

REGENT 1906-1910 :

MRS. E. E. MOFFITT.

\*Died November 25, 1911.

†Died December 12, 1904.

Joseph Ruzicka

Baltimore, Md. - Greensboro, N. C.

3329 LIST No. 18 CONSISTING OF BOOKS

STYLE

M-88  
COLOR

75-  
TITLE

AUTHOR

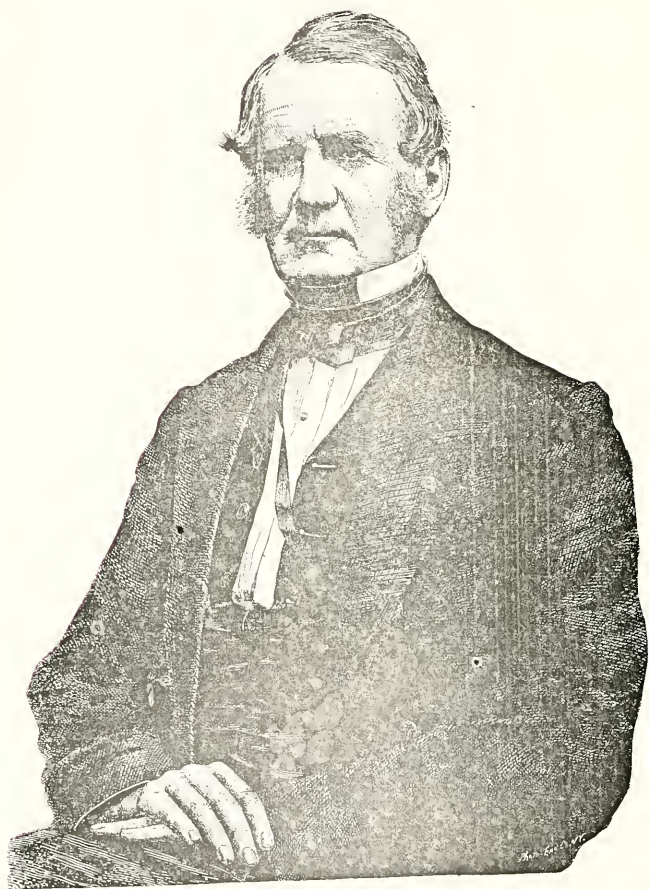
VOLUME & DATE

CALL NUMBER

SPECIAL INSTRUCTIONS

over-stamped  
ca. 1950 - 1955  
2. 1950 - 1955





WILLIAM A. GRAHAM.



# The North Carolina Booklet

---

Vol. XVI

JULY, 1916

No. 1

---

## William Alexander Graham

---

By Chief Justice WALTER CLARK.

---

William Alexander Graham, Speaker of the House of Commons, Governor of North Carolina, Secretary of the United States Navy, Senator of the United States and also of the Confederate States, nominee of the Whig Party for the Vice Presidency, was born at Vesuvius Furnace, the residence of his father, General Joseph Graham, in Lincoln County, North Carolina, 5 September, 1804. He sprung from that sturdy Scotch-Irish race which has furnished so many prominent men to the Republic. His mother was Isabella, daughter, of Major John Davidson, who was one of the signers of the famous "Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence" at Charlotte on 20 May, 1775, of which John Adams wrote: "The genuine sense of America at that moment was never so well expressed before nor since."

The father of Governor Graham, General Joseph Graham, merits more than a passing notice. At 18 years of age he entered the Continental Army in 1778, soon became Adjutant and was promoted to Major of 4 North Carolina (Continental) Regiment. He was in many engagements and was often wounded. At the capture of Charlotte by Cornwallis 26 September, 1780, he received nine wounds (six of them with sabre) and was left on the ground for dead. He was a member of the State Convention of 1788 and also of 1789, served in several legislatures and in the war of 1814 commanded a brigade from this State and South Carolina sent by President Madison to the aid of General Jackson in the Creek War. William A. Graham was the youngest son in a family of seven sons and three daughters who grew to ma-

turity. One of his brothers, James Graham, was a member of Congress from this State, continuously from 1833 to 1847, except one term. One of his sisters married Rev. Dr. R. H. Morrison, President of Davidson College, and was the mother of the wife of Stonewall Jackson.

The subject of this sketch began his academic education under Rev. Dr. Muchat, at Statesville, a scholar of repute. Thence he was sent to Hillsboro, where he was prepared for college. He entered the University of North Carolina in 1820. At school and college he evinced the characteristics which distinguished him in later life—studious, thoughtful, courteous, considerate of others, with great natural dignity of manner, and marked ability. His schoolmate, Judge Brevard, said of him at this early age: “He was the only boy I ever knew who would spend his Saturdays in reviewing the studies of the week.” He graduated in 1824 with the highest honors of his class, which he shared with Matthias E. Manly, afterwards a Judge of the Supreme Court.

After a tour of the Western States, made on horseback, as was then the most convenient and usual mode, he began the study of law in the office of Judge Ruffin, at Hillsboro, and was admitted to the bar in 1826. Though his family connections were numerous and influential in Mecklenburg, Cabarrus and Lincoln, he decided to locate at Hillsboro, among whose resident lawyers then were Thomas Ruffin, Archibald D. Murphey, Willie P. Mangum, Francis L. Hawks, and Frederick Nash; and among the lawyers regularly attending from other courts were George E. Badger, William H. Haywood and Bartlett Yancey. At this bar of exceptionally strong men, he quickly took first rank.

In 1833 he was elected a member of the General Assembly from the Town of Hillsboro, one of the boroughs which up to the Convention of 1835 retained the English custom of choosing a member of the legislature. It is related that he was chosen by one majority, the last vote polled being cast by a free man of color, this class being entitled to the fran-

chise till the Constitution of 1835. Being asked why he voted for Mr. Graham, the colored voter, a man of reputation and some property, replied: "I always vote for a gentleman."

His first appearance on the floor of the House of Representatives was on a motion to send to the Senate a notice that the House was ready to proceed to the election of a Governor for the State, and to place in nomination for that office, David L. Swain, who had been his college mate at the University of North Carolina. Two days later he had the satisfaction to report his election, and was appointed first on the committee to notify him of his election. The relations of these two distinguished men remained singularly close and cordial through life. In 1834 and again in 1835 he was re-elected for the borough of Hillsboro, and at both sessions he was Chairman of the Judiciary Committee, then as now, deemed the highest position, next to the Speaker. In 1838, as Chairman of the Judiciary Committee, he submitted the report of the Commissioners who had prepared the "Revised Statutes."

It was to him that in 1834 Judge Gaston, who was a Roman Catholic, addressed his open letter in defence of his acceptance of a seat upon the Supreme Court, notwithstanding the provision in the old Constitution (repealed by the Convention of 1835) which declared incapable of holding office all those who "deny the truths of the Protestant religion." With all deference to the writer thereof whose name will always command the highest respect, that letter will remain a plausible instance of special pleading whose defective logic has been pardoned by reason of the inherent opposition of all generous minds to the constitutional provision which gave rise to it, and the eminent public services, ability and popularity of its author.

In 1838 and again in 1840, Mr. Graham was elected to the General Assembly from Orange County, and was Speaker of the House of Representatives in both. The journals, during his legislative career, attest his great industry and his

leadership. He introduced the first bill that was passed to establish a system of common schools, and the bills introduced or supported, or reported by him on the subjects of banking, finance, education, and internal improvements, demonstrate the broadness of his views, and that he was one of the most progressive men of his time.

In 1840, Judge Strange and Hon. Bedford Brown, the United States Senators from this State, resigned their seats rather than obey instructions which had been passed by the General Assembly. Willie P. Mangum, of Orange, was chosen to succeed Brown, and though Mr. Graham was from the same county and only 36 years of age, he was elected to fill Mr. Strange's unexpired term. This was a most emphatic testimonial to his commanding position in the Whig Party, which held so many eminent leaders, and in the State at large. He was among the youngest, if not the youngest member, of the United States Senate, when he took his seat. He commanded the respect and attention of that body upon all occasions, and we are told by a member of that Congress that "Mr. Clay regarded him as a most superior man, socially and intellectually."

The time of Mr. Graham's service in the Senate was a stormy period. President Harrison, who had gone into office upon a tidal wave, died just one month after his inauguration, and was succeeded by the Vice-President, Mr. Tyler, who soon placed the administration in complete opposition to the policies of the party by which he had been elected. Upon all the most important measures which came before the Senate, Mr. Graham impressed himself by arguments which received general approbation and which drew forth specially commendatory letters from Clay, Webster, Chancellor Kent, and others.

At the expiration of his term in March, 1843, Mr. Graham resumed the practice of his profession, the Democratic Party having secured a majority in the General Assembly and chosen a member of that party, William H. Haywood,

Jr., to succeed him in the Senate. In 1844 he was nominated by the Whig Party for Governor. He had not sought nor desired the nomination. The salary of the office was small and its expenses great. In 1836 he had married Susan Washington, daughter of John Washington of New Bern, a lady of great beauty of character and person, and a young and growing family made demands upon his income, which was impaired by the inroads which public life had made upon his law practice. But true as always to the calls of duty, he yielded to the representations of gentlemen of high standing in all parts of the State. His Democratic competitor was Hon. Michael Hoke, like himself, a native of the county of Lincoln. Mr. Hoke was about the same age, of fine presence, decided ability and great popularity. After a canvass whose brilliancy has had no parallel in the history of the State, save perhaps that between Vance and Settle in 1876, Mr. Graham was elected by a large majority. His competitor died a few weeks after the election, his death having been caused, it was thought, by the great physical and mental strain of the campaign. On 1 January, 1845, Governor Graham was sworn in, with imposing ceremonies, which, for brilliancy and the size of the audience, were till then without precedent.

His inaugural address was especially noteworthy, not alone for its purity of style and elevation of thought, but in its recommendations. The Asylum for the Insane, and for the Deaf, Dumb and Blind, and the Emmons Geological Survey all had their genesis in this Inaugural, the first two being established by laws enacted during his administration and the latter just afterwards. He also laid special emphasis upon the Common School System, then lately inaugurated, and the first act in favor of which had been introduced by himself when a member of the legislature. Mr. Webster in a letter specially commended the address for its wisdom and progressiveness, as did Prof. Olmsted for its recommendation in favor of the establishment of a Geological Survey.



His aid to our new and struggling railroads built by State aid was invaluable.

In 1849 he delivered the address before the Literary Societies at the University. This address remains to this day one of the very best of the long series delivered since the incipency of the custom. Upon the success of his party in the election of President Taylor, Senator Mangum, one of the confidential advisers of the new administration, wrote Governor Graham that he could make his choice between the Mission to Russia and the Mission to Spain. Subsequently the Mission to Spain was tendered him and declined.

Upon the accession of President Fillmore, Mr. Graham was tendered the appointment of Secretary of the Navy in a very complimentary letter from the President, who urged his acceptance. In July, 1850, he entered upon the duties of the office. Such was his diligence that his first report, 30 November, 1850, embraced a review of the whole naval establishment with recommendations for its entire reorganization. Even an opposition Senator, Thomas H. Benton, joined in the commendation of his report, and wrote with special reference to the Coast Survey service: "I consider it one of the most perfect reports I ever read—a model of a business report and one which should carry conviction to every candid inquiring mind. I deem it one of the largest reforms, both in an economical and administrative point of view, which the state of our affairs admits of."

His administration of the Navy Department was marked by one of the most remarkable enterprises, whose success has been of world wide importance—the organization of the Perry Expedition to Japan, which opened up that ancient empire to modern civilization. The success of that expedition constitutes one of the principal claims of Mr. Fillmore's administration to the admiration of posterity and was, indeed, an era in the history of the world, of which the events of the last few years are striking results. The expedition was conceived and inaugurated by Mr. Graham and was executed

upon the lines laid down by him, and the commander, Commodore Perry, was selected by him, though the expedition did not actually set sail till after he had resigned. In 1851 Mr. Graham also sent out under the auspices of the Navy Department, an expedition under Lieutenant Herndon to explore the valley and sources of the Amazon. The report of this expedition was published by order of Congress in February, 1854, and was noticed by the London "Westminster Review" of that year, which bestowed high praise upon the author for his conception, and the thoroughness and wisdom of his instructions to the commander.

The great compromise measures of 1850, which would have saved the country from the terrible civil war, if it could have been saved, received strong aid and support from the then Secretary of the Navy, who was on terms of intimacy and personal friendship with Clay, Webster and other leaders in that great movement to stay destructive tendencies, which proved, "alas, too strong for human power." When the Whig National Convention assembled in June, 1852, it placed in nomination for the presidency, Winfield Scott, and William A. Graham for Vice-President. With a delicacy which has been rarely followed since, he resigned "to relieve the administration of any possible criticism or embarrassment on his account in the approaching canvass," and the President appreciating the high sense of delicacy and propriety "which prompted the act, accepted his resignation with unfeigned regret."

It may well be doubted if any of his predecessors, or successors, either in the office of Secretary of the Navy or Governor of North Carolina, has shown as much progressiveness, and as large a conception of the possibilities of his office, in widening the opportunities for development of the country. Certainly none have surpassed him in the wisdom and breadth of his views, and the energy displayed in giving them successful result. It is his highest claim to fame that he was thoroughly imbued with a true conception of the possibilities

and needs of the time and his whole career marks him as second to none of the sons whom North Carolina has given to fame.

In 1852, after his retirement from the Cabinet, he delivered before the Historical Society of New York his admirable and instructive address upon "The British Invasion of the South in 1780-81." This address preserved and brought into notice many historical facts, which with our usual magnificent disregard of the praiseworthy deeds of our State had been allowed to pass out of the memory of men and the record proofs of which were mouldering and in danger of being totally lost.

Mr. Graham was State Senator from Orange in 1854-55, took, as always, a leading part, and gave earnest support to Internal Improvements, especially advocating railroad construction. He and Governor Morehead headed the delegation to the Whig Convention in 1856 at Baltimore, which endorsed the nomination of Mr. Fillmore. He was one of that number of distinguished men from all sections, who met in Washington in February, 1860, and who in the vain hope of staying the drift of events towards a disruption of the Union and Civil War, placed before the country the platform and the candidates of the "Constitutional Union" party.

In February, 1861, he canvassed parts of the State with Governor Morehead, Judge Badger, Z. B. Vance, and others, in opposition to the call of a State Convention to take the State out of the Union, which was defeated by a narrow margin and doubtless by their efforts. But the tide of events was too strong. The fall of Fort Sumter 13 April, 1861, and the call by Mr. Lincoln upon North Carolina for her quota of 75,000 men—a call made without authority—changed the face of affairs. The State Convention met 20 May, 1861, and on the same day unanimously pronounced the repeal by this State of the Ordinance of 1789 by which North Carolina had acceded to the Federal Union under the Constitution of the United States. Mr. Graham, Judge



Badger, and others concurred in the result, after first offering a resolution (which was voted down) basing the withdrawal of the State, not upon the alleged inherent right of the State to withdraw from the Union at its will, but upon the right of revolution justified by the action of the Federal authorities.

One of Mr. Graham's most eloquent and convincing speeches was that made before the Convention in December, 1861, in opposition to an ordinance requiring a universal test oath, which was defeated. While giving to the Confederate Government his full support, he earnestly opposed arbitrary measures which indicated any forgetfulness of the rights of the citizen, and in March, 1861, he procured action by the Convention which caused the return to his home of a minister of the Gospel in Orange County, who had been illegally arrested by military order and confined in prison at Richmond. His speech against the test oath was used by Reverdy Johnson in arguing *ex parte Garland*, in the United States Supreme Court.

In December, 1863, Mr. Graham was elected to the Senate of the Confederate States by a vote of more than two-thirds in the General Assembly, and took his seat in May, 1864. It was at a troublous time and his counsel was, as usual, earnestly sought. In January, 1865, after consultation with General Lee, and with his full approval, Senator Graham introduced the resolution to create the Peace Commission, whose adoption caused the Hampton Roads Conference, 3 February, 1865, and might have saved the brave lives so uselessly sacrificed after that date, but that President Davis declared himself without power to come to any terms that would put an end to the Confederacy. Thereupon Senator Graham gave notice that to save further useless effusion of blood he would introduce a resolution for negotiations looking to a return to the Union, but the notice was unfavorably received, and he decided that the introduction of the resolution would be unavailing. Had it passed, we might not only have

saved much useless bloodshed, but have avoided the unspeakable horrors of Reconstruction. But blindness ruled those in power. His course has been thought like that of North Carolina—reluctant to leave the Union, opposed to usurpations by the new government, willing to negotiate for honorable peace when hope was gone, but that being denied, holding out to the end. Five of his sons, all of them who were old enough, were in the Confederate Army to the end, and each of them was wounded in battle.

The Confederate Senate adjourned 16 March, and on the 20th he visited Raleigh at request of Governor Vance, and in the conference told him that he left Richmond satisfied that all hope for the success of the Confederacy had passed; that Mr. Davis had declared that he was without power to negotiate for a return to the Union; and that each State could only do that for itself; but he advised Governor Vance that should he call a meeting of the Legislature to consider such action, Mr. Davis should be apprised. To this Governor Vance assented. But before further action could be taken the approach of General Sherman made it useless. On 12 April, 1865, Governor Vance sent ex-Governors Graham and Swain as Commissioners to General Sherman, then approaching Raleigh, with a letter asking a suspension of arms with a view to a return to the Union. The letter is set out in "North Carolina Regimental Histories" Vol. I, page 58. General Sherman courteously received the Commissioners but declined the requested truce. Of course Governor Graham's course in this trying time expressed the views of all those who saw the hopelessness of the situation, and who felt that the lives of the gallant men who had served their country faithfully should now be preserved for its future service in days of peace. He was not wanting in this supreme hour in the highest fidelity to the people that had honored and trusted him.

Of especial interest, showing his wisdom and foresight are his letters to Governor Swain, of this period, published in

Mrs. Spencer's "Last Ninety Days of the War." He was the trusted adviser of Governor Vance, who in his life of Swain says: "In those troublous years of war, I consulted him more frequently perhaps than any other man in the State except Governor Graham," adding, that "in him there was a rounded fullness of the qualities, intellectual and moral, which constitute the excellence of manhood in a degree never excelled by any citizen of North Carolina whom I have personally known, except by William A. Graham." Governor Graham was also the sure reliance of Governor Worth, whose most important State papers are from his pen.

In 1866 Mr. Graham was elected to the United States Senate with his former classmate and competitor at college, Hon. Matthias E. Manly as colleague, but the Republican majority in Congress was contemplating Reconstruction and they were refused their seats. When such legislation was enacted, a universal gloom fell upon the entire South. In its midst a Convention was called of all conservative citizens, irrespective of former party affiliations to meet in Raleigh, 5 February, 1868, over which Mr. Graham was called by common consent to preside, as our wisest citizen. His earnest, able and statesmanlike speech had a powerful effect, it aroused the people from despondency and infused into them that spirit of determination which continued to grow in strength till the State returned to the control of its native white population. In this speech, he was the first, in view of the recent Act of Congress, conferring suffrage upon the colored race, to lay down the necessity for the Whites to stand together, and he enunciated the doctrine of "White Supremacy" as indispensable for the preservation of civilization in the South. While others favored efforts to obtain control or guidance of the Negro, he, with a better knowledge of that race, insisted upon the solidarity of the Whites as our only hope. The event has proved the accuracy of his foresight. This speech while the Convention was in session was as brave as any act of the war.

He was prominent in asserting the right of the citizens to the writ of habeas corpus in 1870, when Judge Pearson declared the "judiciary exhausted"; and when Governor Holden was impeached in December of that year, his was the first named selected among the eminent counsel, who were retained to assist the managers appointed by the House of Representatives in the prosecution. His speech was one of great ability, but singularly free from personal denunciation of those who had trodden under foot the Constitution and the laws.

He was selected by the great philanthropist, George Peabody, as one of the board of eminent men whom he requested to act as trustees in administering the fund donated by him to the cause of education in the South, which had been so sorely impoverished by the war, and attended its sessions with great regularity.

He was also selected by Virginia to represent her upon the Board of Arbitration appointed by that State and Maryland to settle the disputed boundary between the two States.

On 20 May, 1875, he delivered an address at Charlotte upon the celebration of the Centennial Anniversary of the Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence and arrayed in a masterly manner the historic evidence of its authenticity.

Among his many valuable addresses is that delivered at Greensboro in 1860 upon the services of General Nathanael Greene, and memorial addresses upon the life and character of Judges A. D. Murphey and George E. Badger and Chief Justice Thomas Ruffin. His address at the State University and that upon the British Invasion of North Carolina in 1780-81 have already been mentioned. Notwithstanding his frequent public services, in the intervals he readily returned to his professional duties and to the last was in full practice at the bar. His argument before Judge Brooks in 1870 at Salisbury on the habeas corpus for release of Josiah Turner and others was a masterpiece.

He was nominated by acclamation in Orange County to the State Constitutional Convention of 1875. His declining health prevented his taking part in the canvass. He issued a strong address to his constituents which was widely circulated throughout the State, with great effect. His election was a matter of course, but before he could take his seat, he had passed beyond earthly honors. He was at Saratoga, N. Y., attending the session of the Virginia and Maryland Boundary Commission when renewed and alarming symptoms of heart trouble appeared. The best efforts of medical science proved unavailing, and he passed away early in the morning of 11 August, 1875, being nearly 71 years of age.

Numerous meetings of the Bar and public bodies, not only in North Carolina, but elsewhere, expressed their sense of the public loss, and the great journals of the country responded in articles expressive of the national bereavement. The States of Maryland and Virginia took care that his remains should be received with due honor and escorted across their borders. At the borders of North Carolina they were received by a committee appointed by the Mayor and Common Council of Raleigh, a committee appointed by the bar of Raleigh, and another by the authorities of the town of Hillsboro, by officials and many prominent citizens of the State and conveyed by special train to Raleigh where they were escorted by a military and civic procession to the Capitol, in whose rotunda, draped for the occasion, they lay in state. Late in the afternoon of the same day, attended by the Raleigh military companies and by special guards of honor, appointed by cities and towns of the State, and by the family of the deceased, his remains were carried by special train to Hillsboro, where they were received by the whole population of the town and escorted to the family residence, where they lay in state till noon on Sunday, August 15th. At that hour they were conveyed to the Presbyterian Church, and after appropriate funeral serv-



ices were interred with solemn ceremony, amid an immense concourse gathered from many counties, in its historic graveyard, where rest the ashes of William Hooper, A. D. Murphey, Chief Justice Nash, Judge Norwood, and many others, worthily prominent in the annals of the State.

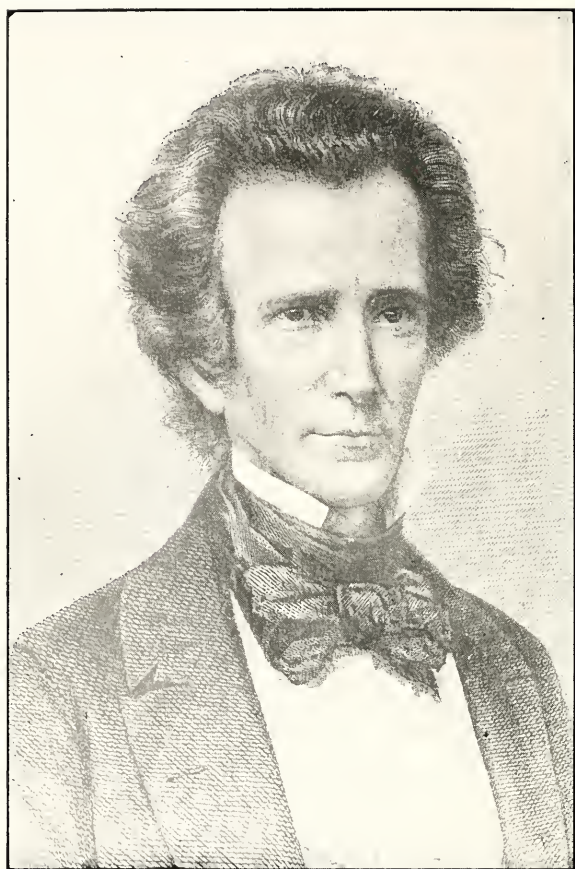
Governor Graham left surviving him his widow, who subsequently died 1 May, 1890; seven sons, to wit: Dr. Joseph Graham, of Charlotte (died August 12, 1907); Major John W. Graham, of Hillsboro; Major W. A. Graham, of Lincoln; Captain James A. Graham (died in March, 1909), and Captain Robert D. Graham (died July, 1904), both resident in late years in Washington City; Dr. George W. Graham, of Charlotte; Judge Augustus W. Graham, of Oxford; and an only daughter, Susan Washington, who married the author of this very imperfect sketch of his life and services. She died in Raleigh 10 December, 1909.

Fortunate in his lineage and the sturdy race from which he sprung, strikingly handsome in person, of commanding appearance and stature, courteous in his bearing toward all, high or low, of high mental endowments, of a personal character without spot or blemish, true to all men, and therefore true to himself, possessed of undaunted courage, moral and physical, with remarkable soundness of judgment, conservative in his views, but progressive in his public action, abundant in services to his State and to his country, holding the entire respect of all and the hatred of no one, North Carolina has laid to rest in her bosom no son greater or more worthy than William A. Graham. His fame will grow brighter as the records are examined and weighed in the cold, clear, impartial light of the future.

To North Carolinians, the name of William A. Graham is the synonym of high character and true service, and in rendering to him and his memory high honor, the people of the State have indicated those traits of character which most strongly command their approbation.

*Stat nominis umbra.*





JAMES C. DOBBIN.



## James Cochran Dobbin, Secretary of the Navy in the Cabinet of President Pierce 1853-1857

---

By HENRY ELLIOT SHEPHERD, M.A., LL.D.

Author "History of the English Language," "Study of Edgar Allan Poe," "Life of Robert E. Lee," "Commentary Upon Tennyson's 'In Memoriam,'" "Representative Authors of Maryland," Contributions To "The Oxford Dictionary," "The American Journal of Philology," etc.

---

The Dobbin family, a branch of which was founded in North Carolina, not far from the middle of the eighteenth century, seems to have descended from a French Huguenot ancestry, the name, it is said, being a phonetic corruption of its original form, Daubigné, into Daubin or Dobbin. The family to this day, has representatives in other States, sprung from the same source, but these lie beyond the scope of the researches contemplated in the present biography. During the relentless persecutions and proscriptions, which both preceded and succeeded the revocation of the Edict of Nantes, October, 1865, a large Huguenot element found refuge in England and in Ireland, in the latter country many being established in the region which includes Carrickfergus and Belfast. The Huguenot influences in America, above all in the South, forms part of our national record, and in relation to our present theme, demands neither elaboration nor enlargement at the hands of the historian or chronicler of the house of Dobbin. The first of whom we have definite knowledge as associated with North Carolina, was my great-grandfather in the maternal line, Hugh Dobbin. The name is not unknown in our mountain region, and it was borne in a period not distant from the American Revolution by at least one of the evangelists who preached the gospel in a country then hardly rescued from the sway

of the primeval forests in which "the groves were God's first temples." These, however, have assumed almost the shadowy form of tradition. The family acquires a clearly defined attitude in North Carolina, with Hugh Dobbin, paternal grandfather of James C. Dobbin. Hugh Dobbin was engaged in commercial pursuits in both Carolinas. In addition, he was interested in the maritime trade of that age, and in vessels that frequented the port of Baltimore. The exact date of his settlement in the South I have not been able to ascertain, 1760 would constitute an approximation at least. The time of his death, was not distant from 1790 or 1795. About 1780 or 1782, he married Margaret Moore, of Bennettsville, S. C., who was a daughter of Gully Moore, a patriot of the Revolutionary era and a man marked by force of character, as well as vigor of intellect. From this marriage sprang John Moore Dobbin (father of James C. Dobbin), who died in 1837. His early years were passed in Person County; and not far from 1813 he married as his first wife, Miss Anness Cochran, mother of James Cochran Dobbin, whose middle name perpetuates the memory of his maternal ancestry. Miss Cochran's father had been a conspicuous figure in the political life of his time, having served in Congress during the critical era which embraced the second war with England. When in the years of dawning manhood, John Moore Dobbin, born in 1784, established himself in Fayetteville, then an expanding commercial centre, its development not yet arrested, nor its growth paralyzed by adverse and hostile combinations in the sphere of railway creation and extension. He became a leading factor, a potent element in the material growth of both Carolinas. In Fayetteville, James C. Dobbin was born, January 17, 1814; when hardly beyond the age of six, his mother died, in the white flower of early womanhood; some three years later his father married a second time, Margaret MacQueen, of Chat-

ham County.\* The natal day of Mr. Dobbin is coincident with that of Benjamin Franklin, and two days removed from that of Edgar Allan Poe and Robert E. Lee. The world, then as now, was enveloped in war, the combined hosts were pressing out the heart of France, and the overthrow of the first Napoleon was almost a foregone result.

Of Mr. Dobbin's childhood years, no definite or continuous account has been preserved; only a fragmentary reminiscence, or a tradition of some boyish prank, rescued from oblivion by the loving memory of those that came after him in his own household, or recalled from forgetfulness when his co-mates of this dawning period contemplated with manly pride, unmarred by touch of envy, his rapid ascent from local celebrity to the lofty dignity of a national figure, absorbed in the complex diplomatic negotiations with Japan (1854), the effect of which has proved a potent agency in shaping the development of all subsequent history. His intellect ever normal in its attitude, was unmarked by the spectacular episodes and moving incidents that are the charm of the sensational biographer. If his genius "was nursed in solitude," its perfect accord and equilibrium were maintained to the last, as he lay on his deathbed on a serene August morning in 1857. The routine of his early life found variety and diversion by visits during the prolonged summer season, to the ancestral home in Person County. His scholastic career seems to have assumed a definite character in an academy at Fayetteville, conducted by the Rev. Colin McIver

---

\*The reader will not fail to note that in the earlier phases of my narrative, I have been compelled to depend in a measure upon family traditions and transmitted memories. Many invaluable records and letters were destroyed during the sacking of our home at Fayetteville, March, 1865, by Sherman. Yet with these disadvantages to overcome, I do not think that I have fallen into any serious error, or marked variation from truth, either in reference to statements of fact, or in cases which involve questions of chronology. In regard to the essential features of Mr. Dobbin's own life, there exists no shadow of doubt.

(a notable figure in the ecclesiastical annals of his day) in strict conformity to the ancient classical standards prevailing in England and in Scotland; the fame of its instruction had passed beyond the bounds of the State: among his associates was Judah P. Benjamin, of Charleston, S. C., a name linked with brilliant achievement in both Great Britain and America. We find young Dobbin at a time not much later than that which we now contemplate, a pupil of the Bingham School, then having its home at Hillsboro, a point distinguished from an early period, as a centre of social and intellectual culture. In June, 1828, a lad of fourteen, he passes from the guardianship of Mr. Bingham and is admitted to the University of North Carolina. Among his classmates was Thomas H. Haughton, whom in 1845, he defeated for Congress, and Thomas L. Clingman—memorable in peace as in war, for it was Clingman's North Carolina Brigade which was in large measure the agency that in June, 1864, turned back the tide, and rescued Petersburg from the premature grasp of the invader and spoiler. Mr. Dobbin graduated in 1832, attaining scholastic distinction of the highest order. His ideal grace was resistless; faculty and students alike, yielded to the magnetic influence; to the lover of romance he might have been regarded as some Percival or Galahad, diverted from the quest of the grail and brought from dreamland into our grim world of austere realities. Dr. Caldwell cherished for him a genuine affection, despite the college prank to which young Dobbin was a party, several lads taking possession of the Doctor's coach, conveying it under cover of night to a distance from his residence and leaving it concealed in a dense wood. As they were on the point of returning to their quarters, the coach, as they supposed, being securely disposed of, to their unspeakable amazement, the Doctor appeared at the window of the vehicle, and in his peculiar tone quietly observed: "Well, young gentlemen, you have brought me down here; now, you can carry me back." Carry him back they did,

but the story had no sequel, as the Doctor seems to have entered heartily into the humorous phase of the incident. During Mr. Dobbin's college career, his tastes, sympathies, and aspirations were moulded and fashioned by his affectionate devotion to the sovereign masters of literary and classical culture, not as illustrated in our native speech alone, but in the supreme lords of the antique world as well. His "mental armor" as he himself described it, in his address to the literary societies of the University (delivered when I was emerging from childhood to boyhood) was bright and brilliant, even when he was fading from us, the victim of immitigable disease. With unabating zeal and diligence, he directed the education of his sons and nephews; whenever he visited his home during his official life in Washington, a rigid inquiry into their progress was a marked feature of his coming. The academic record was thoroughly scrutinized, and the work accomplished in *Cæsar*, *Virgil*, *Cicero*, during the term, was subjected to rigid, minute review. Among the treasures of my library, I reckon, with a consciousness of increasing pleasure, the Bible presented to him at the University in 1831, the year preceding his graduation; his edition of Macaulay's "Miscellanies," and the account of Commodore Perry's Expedition to Japan, edited by Rev. Francis L. Hawks, D. D., the historian of North Carolina. Each of these contains the autograph of Mr. Dobbin; and the last I received as his special gift, September 10, 1856. Not long after the completion of his university course, he applied himself to the study of the law, under the direction of Hon. Robert Strange, a judge of the Superior Court, and one of the lights of the bar and the bench in the period of which he formed a part. In 1835, he was admitted to the practice of his profession.

Fifteen years later (November, 1850) teacher and pupil were arrayed against each other in the trial of one of the most notable criminal cases associated with the history of the South: that of Mrs. Simpson, at Fayetteville, charged



with having caused the death of her husband by means of poison. Judge Strange appeared for the defense, and Mr. Dobbin assisted the State, in the conduct of the prosecution. Two years after his admission to the bar, or in 1837, his father died, his illness being brief, as well as sudden. His second wife, as well as six children survived him, of whom James C. Dobbin was the eldest. In 1838, Mr. Dobbin married Miss Louisa Holmes, of Sampson, who died in 1848, leaving three children, of whom one only is still living. He never again assumed the matrimonial relation. During the earlier stages of his professional career, Mr. Dobbin was guided by a wise and judicious conservation of mental and physical resources. There was no gratuitous expenditure of force, no dissipation of energy. His circuit was restricted to the counties adjoining his home, Cumberland, Robeson, Sampson. The blare of trumpets, the quest of notoriety, entered not into his life, and to him, in its intensest significance, "fame was no plant that grows on mortal soil." With the increasing years, he attained unchallenged rank among the foremost advocates of an age, which numbered among its representatives such "men of light and leading" as Toomer, Eccles, Strange and Henry. His summary or synopsis of the evidence in the case of Mrs. Simpson was a masterful illustration of ideal eloquence, "logic on fire," relentless in its vigor, remorseless in its conclusions, resistless in its power. The coming of 1845, heralds the first period of Mr. Dobbin's development in the sphere of politics. During the campaign of this eventful season, he was nominated by the Democratic party as one of its candidates for congressional honors. He had just passed his thirtieth year, and the honor was not only unlooked for, but absolutely unsolicited. Yet he defeated his classmate, Mr. John H. Haughton, by a majority of 2,000 votes, a marked advance upon the numerical results that had been attained by his successful predecessors in his own party, and one which implied an emphatic tribute to his personal charm, and his magnetism of charac-

ter. Despite both youth and want of parliamentary experience Mr. Dobbin speedily became a name to conjure with in the Twenty-ninth Congress. A place was assigned him upon some of the committees which involved delicate and critical functions, as that upon Contested Elections, and in some of their most complex procedures, he maintained a part as vigorous and effective as it was manly and honorable. In the discussion of the Public Land Bill, in the debates upon the Oregon Question, which had engaged us in serious complications with Great Britain, we see him in the forefront of the battle. Above all, he was the inflexible and dauntless champion of the South, and whenever her claims were assailed, or her prerogative invaded, the very *gaudium certaminis* seemed to lighten his pale and classic features as if a radiance from an undreamed sphere had descended upon them. His speech upon the repeal of the tariff of 1842, illustrates his eloquence in its purest and noblest form. Mere extracts or detached fragments, would tend rather to mar its unity, artistic and dialectic, than to convey an adequate impression of its power. Upon the expiration of his term, Mr. Dobbin declined a re-election, which he might have secured without doubt, or even without effort, and resumed the congenial pursuit of the law at Fayetteville. Yet the "jealous mistress" was not suffered to absorb all his energies, or to assume an unchallenged monopoly of his versatile faculties. We find him in the Legislature of 1848-9, the most responsible positions of trust being assigned to his guidance. It was during this Legislature that a notable incident in the life of Mr. Dobbin, and in the history of North Carolina becomes the subject of an especial record. I refer to the creation of the Asylum for the Insane (State Hospital), at Raleigh, the abiding memorial of his genius, destined "to live with the eternity of his fame." It was during this session that Miss Dix, whose heroic labors in the sphere of philanthropy, are familiar to two continents, memorialized the Legislature to erect an asylum for the insane. The

memorial being referred to a special committee, a bill was reported in favor of granting the prayer of the memorialist.

At this stage, however, the chairman of this committee, whom at a later period we encounter as Governor Ellis, had retired from the Legislature in order to accept a judicial position, and the bill introduced by him, providing that \$100,000 be appropriated for the erection of the institution, though advocated by Mr. Kenneth Rayner in an appeal marked by rare fervor and earnestness, was defeated by a vote of 44 ayes, 66 noes. Two days preceding, Mrs. Dobbin had been consigned to the grave, and Mr. Dobbin was absent from the sessions of the House. Miss Dix was naturally alarmed in reference to the fate of the bill, and having absolute faith in Mr. Dobbin's influence, and the power of his oratory, recalled to his memory the urgent request of his wife that he would advocate and champion the measure. The appeal was one that he could not disregard, and on the next day he was present in his place. The bill had been reconsidered, upon a motion to appropriate \$25,000, but Mr. Dobbin introduced a substitute by which, in four years \$85,000 could be provided by the State for the institution. The proposed substitute he advocated with even more than his wonted grace and appealing power, the result being that it was adopted by an almost unanimous vote. In 1852, we find him in the Legislature for the last time. Nominated in caucus for the Senate of the United States, he failed of election, it was currently reported, through the perfidy of one of his own allies, a name long since effaced from the political heavens, but associated with a family by no means extinct in North Carolina. It was in March, 1853, that Mr. Dobbin became Secretary of the Navy, succeeding in that capacity, John P. Kennedy, of Baltimore, who was chosen to fill the vacancy created by the retirement of William A. Graham, as soon as nominated for the Vice-Presidency upon the same ticket with General Scott, June, 1852. The nomination of Mr. Pierce by the Baltimore Convention was



in large measure the outcome of Mr. Dobbin's brilliant appeals in his behalf, and as an acknowledgment of his invaluable services, the Naval Bureau was tendered to him by the incoming president upon his election in November, 1852. The Cabinet of Mr. Pierce was especially distinguished by its combination of varied and marked intellectual abilities—William L. Marcy, Jefferson Davis, Caleb Cushing, James C. Dobbin. It may be declared with no trace of hyperbole, that in this elect company which blended "all the talents," the modest and gracious gentleman from North Carolina, if not the most richly endowed with gifts of intellect or genius for administration, was the most attractive and fascinating figure. As a delegate from his native State, he had accomplished the nomination of Mr. Pierce by the Democratic Convention, and that he possessed the special regard and admiration of his chief, I have ample reason to know, such as has never been brought into the fierce light of popular knowledge, or passed beyond the bounds of his domestic circle. His administration of the Naval Department was not merely marked by efficiency and excellence in detail; it was crowned by episodes and incidents whose logical influence has tended in certain spheres of development, to direct and control the evolution of contemporary history. Foremost among these, stands the treaty with Japan, March, 1854; the construction of the steam frigates, of which one was the *Merrimac*, 1856, transformed at a later period, 1861-2, into the Confederate *Virginia*. In view of the maritime complications which now prevail, the Martin Koszta incident, 1853, acquires a renescent interest. The student of North Carolina history, cannot fail to note that the Perry Expedition originated in the creative brain of Governor Graham; that the fleet was dispatched by Mr. Kennedy, November, 1852, during his brief official term, June, 1852, to March, 1853; and that the treaty which represents the climax of this epoch-making movement, assumed definite form under the auspicious guidance of Mr. Dobbin. Four "crowded years of

glorious life" in Washington, the effects of which are growing from more to more with the increasing ages; and for him the end is nigh at hand. To those who stood in intimate relation to Mr. Dobbin, it was evident that death had set his royal seal upon him not long after he had entered the Cabinet of Mr. Pierce; the malady had probably asserted its power in germinal form, ere he attained that stage. Five months after the close of his administrative period, he died at his home near Fayetteville, August 4, 1857, aged 44; his colleague, Mr. Marcy, preceeding him to the grave by a single month. Of his three children, his daughter, Mary Louisa Dobbin (who married the late Colonel John H. Anderson), alone remains; for a series of years Brooklyn, N. Y., has been her home. James C. Dobbin, Jr., the elder son, died in August, 1869. Some of his father's richest gifts and graces descended upon him like golden showers, above all, that of eloquence, in whose mastery, his rank was in the foremost files. The younger son, John Holmes Dobbin, died in 1865, a youth whose genial, lovable nature clung to him in sunshine and in shadow, in war as in peace, and failed him not even when he stood face to face with the last enemy that shall be destroyed. Mr. Dobbin was laid to rest in the Dobbin-Shepherd grounds, Cross Creek Cemetery, on the 6th of August. The services were held at the Presbyterian Church, a eulogy, based upon the 37th Psalm, 37th verse, being delivered by the pastor, Rev. Adam Gilechrist. The tribute to the dead, was characterized by the urbanity and lucidity of expression which formed the native vesture of his unstudied and habitual utterances. A happy accord in ideals both of life and language, linked into harmony, the eulogist and the subject of his eulogy.

Mr. Dobbin's affability and magnetic charm were unabated, even when the long grapple with a relentless malady had reduced him to a mere vestige of his former self. His habitual loveliness of expression remained with him, prelude, as it were, "that sweet other-world smile, which will be reflected in

the spiritual body among the angels." Just as the transition from death unto life, was reaching its final stage, a friend and kinsman watching at his bedside, asked, "Is Jesus precious to you," to which he replied in a tone not merely audible, but distinct and emphatic, "O yes." Consciousness, as well as an unclouded intellect, remained with him as he was passing into "the twilight of eternal day." When a lad in my teens, I was wounded almost unto death at Gettysburg, July 3, 1863. I fell into the hands of the enemy and for a series of dreary months lay helpless in their hospitals, remote from home, in ceaseless contact with the dying and the dead. Remembering Mr. Pierce's regard for Mr. Dobbin I wrote to the former president, fully aware that my letter had its origin in despair, and was not an inspiration drawn from hope. To my astonishment there came back a prompt, gracious, and cordial reply, containing a generous and enthusiastic tribute to my uncle, as well as an assurance of sympathy for myself in the desolate situation which confronted me; closing with these notable words: "You could not commit a greater mistake than to suppose that I have any power for good with this government." To me it seemed incomprehensible, that this manly and defiant communication from such a source was suffered to pass into my hands, but it came unmarred by the shears of the censor, and I brought the letter with me when I returned to the South, a prisoner on parole. By a melancholy irony of fate, this historic memorial was lost or disappeared from our home at Fayetteville, along with other precious household treasures associated with the name and achievements of our peerless kinsman. The havoc wrought by Sherman in March, 1865, accounts for much, as his spoiling of our goods was remorseless, but it does not resolve the mystery linked with the fate of Mr. Pierce's letter. A gold-headed cane, marked by rare beauty of workmanship, and presented to Mr. Dobbin during his official residence in Washington, was one of the *trophies* of Sherman's occupation of his native town. My personal recol-

lections of my uncle are clear and distinct from the earliest period. When just five years of age, I was carried by an aunt to the Methodist Church at Fayetteville to hear his eulogy upon James K. Polk, who died in June, 1849. A child of eight, I listened to his speeches during the presidential campaign of 1852, he being a candidate for elector. Among the master lights of modern oratory, his proper relation and analogy must be sought in Fox, Hayne, Legare, Preston, by comparison with whom, even in their moments of supreme inspiration, his glory does not fade and his garlands do not wither. His voice was like the note of a clarion, "trumpet tongued," as was that of Shakespeare's appealing angels. A strange and all-prevading faculty of assimilation entered into his language; those who listened were drawn toward him by a magnetic power which took possession of intellect, sensibility, will, and guided them without violence or passion to the assured result, by the exercise of a mysterious and resistless charm. His diction was characterized by an almost ethereal chasteness and purity; his invective or his appeals were bodied in words "headed and winged with flame." The grace and ideal form of an Augustan age, were fused into harmony with the fervor and passion of the South which died at Appomattox in the broadening spring-tide of 1865.

"Who, but hung to hear  
The rapt oration flowing free  
From point to point, with power and grace  
And music in the bounds of law,  
To those conclusions when we saw  
The God within him light his face."

The sovereign elegy of our literature, has glorified the memory and idealized the character of Arthur Henry Hallam, until the world adores the creation wrought by art and by poetic fantasy. Where is the biographer or eulogist of James C. Dobbin, in whose life and achievement were illustrated and revealed the fadeless figure and vesture of Lancelot, while within the mortal frame there breathed the soul of Arthur?

"Whatever record leap to light  
He never shall be shamed."

Of the several portraits of Mr. Dobbin, that in the Navy Department, Washington, seems to me most accurately to reproduce his features. There is a touch of flashiness and gaiety in the portrait in the hall of the Philanthropic Society at Chapel Hill, which was not characteristic of the man. The Washington portrait reveals the placid dignity and serenity that never failed to reflect themselves in his expression. Apart from his speeches during his single term in Congress (1846-48), very few illustrations of his oratorical power remain in complete or available form. I am the fortunate possessor of a copy of the report of the celebrated Simpson trial (November, 1850), but only fragments survive of Mr. Dobbin's numerous eulogies, orations and addresses, some of which have never been excelled during any period in the history of modern eloquence. The extract that follows, is from his speech in Congress, advocating the repeal of the tariff of 1842. It presents a suggestive contrast to the type of parliamentary oratory prevailing in our own day. The diligent reader will not fail to note that an economical issue, associated with Carlyle's "dismal science," is presented with a charming lucidity of statement, and a range of historical acquirement illuminating complex details, which remind us of Macaulay, and bring back the memory of his brilliant feats in this sphere during his career in the British parliament. I quote from the speech referred to:

"Mr. Chairman.—It has fallen to our lot to become actors on the theatre of public life at a most remarkable era in the history of the world. The human mind evincing its mighty and mysterious capabilities is achieving triumphs at once wonderful and sublime. The elements of nature are playthings for it to sport with. Earth, ocean, air, lightning, yield subservient in the hands of genius to minister to the wants, the purposes, the pleasures of man. Science is fast developing to the meanest capacity the hidden secrets of nature, hitherto unexplored in the researches of philosophy. Education is exerting its mild and refining influence to elevate and bless the people. The control of electricity is astonishing the world. The power of steam is annihilating distance, and making remote cities



and towns and strangers at once neighbors and friends. Amid these mighty movements in the fields of science, literature and philosophy, the liberal spirit of a free government, in its steady and onward progress, is beginning to accomplish much for the amelioration of the condition of the human family, so long the hope of the statesman and philanthropist. The illiberal maxims of bad government, too long supported by false reverence for their antiquity, are beginning to give place to enlightened suggestions of experience. England, the birth-place, is proposing to become the grave of commercial restriction. In that land, whose political doctrines are so often the theme of our denunciation and satire, with all the artillery of landed aristocracy, associated wealth, and party vindictiveness levelled at him, there has appeared a learned, a leading Premier, Sir Robert Peel, who, blending in his character much of the philanthropy of Burke, the bold and matchless eloquence of Chatham, and the patriotism of Hampden, has had the moral courage and magnanimity to proclaim that he can no longer resist the convictions of experience and observation, and that the system of commercial restriction and high protection is wrong, oppressive and should be abandoned. Already, sir, has much been done—already has the British tariff, so long pleaded as the excuse for ours, been radically reformed and in obedience to the persevering demand of an outraged people, we hope that the next gale that crosses the Atlantic will come laden with the tidings of a still greater triumph in the repeal of the corn laws, so oppressive to Englishmen, and injurious to Americans.

“And shall we not reciprocate this liberal spirit? Shall republican America, so boastful of her greatness and freedom, be outstripped in her career in this cause of human rights by monarchical England? No sir, I do not, cannot, and will not believe it. I have an abiding, unshaken faith in the ultimate triumph of so righteous a cause.

“Mr. Chairman, we may surpass the nations of the earth in science, in arms and in arts; the genius of our people may attract the admiration of mankind—may cause ‘beauty and symmetry to live on canvas’—may almost make the marble from the quarry to ‘breathe and speak’—may charm the world with elegant attainments in poetry and learning, but much, very much, will be unaccomplished; the beauty of our political escutcheon will still be marred, while commerce is trammelled, and agriculture and trade depressed by bad legislation.”

The extract which follows is taken from Mr. Dobbin’s speech to the jury during the trial of Mrs. Simpson, at Fayetteville, November, 1850. I cannot forbear once more to express my regret that his numerous and brilliant oratorical creations, eulogies, tributes, literary addresses, exist only in fragmentary form, or by the desolation of war, have been

lost beyond recovery. Mr. Dobbin introduces his speech with a graphic portrayal of the conditions, and the individuals associated with this notable tragedy, unsurpassed in celebrity in the annals of North Carolina.

"You have been told, he said (in replying to Hon. Duncan K. McRae, one of the counsel for the defense) of her beauty too, and my distinguished friend has held up before you the picture of her girlhood days—when her life glided on sweetly amid sunshine and flowers, and gay admirers and doting parents—now darkened and beclouded, a prisoner in the damp vaults of the dungeon with the light of heaven only reaching her through iron grates—with the officers of the law now inviting you cruelly to consign her to an ignominious grave, and to hurry her into eternity! The picture was sketched with rare skill and beauty, and presented to you with the finished art of one who knew that your hearts could not fail to be touched by such an appeal. Gentlemen, I complain not of the counsel, but when he spoke of 'hurrying one into eternity' without warning, neither I, nor you, nor any one of this vast concourse, could avoid the contemplation of another, and if possible, a sadder, more touching picture. A youthful stranger came among us, to seek our generous, Southern hospitality. Troops of friends cheered him on. 'None knew him but to love him.' Perhaps the sun never shone on a kindlier youth. Captivated by the charms of one who *seemed* the lovely woman, he blended his destiny with hers. Ann K. Simpson became his bride. For a season, his pathway was checkered over with sunshine and cloud; and then there was seated on his brow, care and gloom and anxiety; and in a moment, *unwarned*, the grim tyrant lays his icy hands upon him. Poor Alexander C. Simpson is in his grave, and his widow is the prisoner at the bar. And while I, too, warn you, not rashly and impetuously, to consign her to an untimely end, but to acquit her, if, in the language of the law, you have 'a reasonable doubt,' I also warn you, that if the testimony has convinced your minds, and points you to the hapless prisoner, as the one who did the dreadful deed, in a moment when poor human nature yielded to the tempter, then—in the face of your countrymen—in the sight of high heaven, you cannot, will not, *dare not shrink from pronouncing the awful doom*. God forbid that I should, in a moment of ardor, appeal to your passions. God forbid that *you*, in a moment of feeling, should forget your duty! Let us, then, gentlemen of the jury, proceed in this investigation calmly and dispassionately, in the fear of God—not man."



## Selwyn

---

By VIOLET G. ALEXANDER.

---

The English name of *Selwyn* holds an interest today for the students of North Carolina's Colonial history, because as early as 1737, the British Crown granted to Colonel JOHN Selwyn large tracts of land in Piedmont Carolina, and upon the death of Colonel *John* Selwyn and his oldest son in the year 1751, his younger son, *George Augustus* Selwyn inherited the vast estates in America.

In the Colonial Records of North Carolina, Vol. V, page 32, we read the following regarding the early land transactions in Carolina: "McCulloh obtained enormous grants for land in North Carolina." . . . Dobb was one of the partners or associates of McCulloh in the venture. . . . On May 9, 1737, the Crown granted to Murray Crymble and James Huey, two merchants of London, warrants for 1,200,000 acres of land in North Carolina, upon condition that they settled thereupon 6,000 *Protestants* and paid as Quit Rents four shillings (about \$1) per 100 acres. These parties, however, as they subsequently formally declared, were "trustees" for one Henry McCulloh, another London merchant, and his "associates." The Surveyor-General of North Carolina in 1744, in pursuance of an order in Council, surveyed and located the warrants on the head-waters of the Pee Dee, Cape Fear and Neuse rivers; the "associates" being allowed to take out separate grants, provided no grant should contain less than 12,000 acres. These lands it seems were laid out into tracts of 100,000 acres each, as follows: Tracts numbered 1, 2, 3 and 5 on the waters of the Yadkin and Catawba. . . . These tracts were subdivided into smaller parcels, containing 12,500 acres each. Tracts No. 1 and No. 3 were assigned to JOHN Selwyn." . . . Vol. V, page 22. "The grants for these lands are recorded in Book 19 of the Records

of Grants in the office of the Secretary of State." . . . "Colonel Nathaniel Alexander, of Mecklenburg County, and John Frohock, Esq., of Rowan County, were appointed commissioners to ascertain the number of white persons, male and female, young and old, who were, without fraud, resident upon each grant on the 25th of March, 1760, and make return of the same under oath to the Governor and Council. (Also see Records of Rowan County.) It was further agreed that upon such returns being made, McCulloh and his 'associates' should formally surrender the unsettled lands to the Crown and be released from payment of back rents due thereon."

Hunter in his sketches of Western North Carolina, pages 19, 20, tells us that: "In 1766, George Augustus Selwyn, having obtained by some means, large grants of land from the British Crown, proceeded to have them surveyed through his agent, Henry Eustace McCulloh and located. On some of these grants, the first settlers, by their own stalwart arms and persevering industry had made considerable improvements. For this reason, not putting much faith in the validity of Selwyn's claims, they seized John Frohock, the surveyor, and compelled him to desist from his work or fare worse." . . . "The original conveyance of the tract of land, upon which the city of Charlotte now stands, contained 360 acres and was made on the 15th day of January, 1767, by Henry E. McCulloh, agent for George Augustus Selwyn, to Abraham Alexander (Chairman of the Convention and Signer of the Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence, May 20, 1775), Thomas Polk, (Colonel of Mecklenburg Militia and Signer of the Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence, May 20, 1775), and John Frohock, as Trustees and Directors and their successors. The consideration was 'ninety pounds' lawful money. The conveyance was witnessed by Matthew McLure (Signer of Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence, May 20, 1775) and John Sample."

The historian, Wheeler, in his History of North Carolina, page 50, states: "That soon after his (Governor Tryon) accession to office, the people of Mecklenburg County opposed Henry E. McCulloh, who was the agent of George A. Selwyn. Selwyn had obtained, by some means, large grants from the English Crown. John Frohock was employed to locate these grants and survey them. The people in arms, seized the surveyor and compelled him to desist."

We find this statement in D. A. Tompkin's History of Mecklenburg County, page 16. "In 1757, the Selwyn tracts of land, one of which (No. 3) is now partly occupied by the city of Charlotte, contained something less than 400 souls" (page 32). "In the latter part of 1765, Henry E. McCulloh donated a tract of 360 acres of land to John Frohock, Abraham Alexander and Thomas Polk, as Commissioners, to hold in trust for the County of Mecklenburg, on which to erect a Court House, prison and stocks. McCulloh was the agent for George Augustus Selwyn who owned several immense tracts of land on a grant from the king; making it obligatory upon him to settle *one* person to every 200 acres of land. He foresaw that the interests of his employer would be advanced by the locating of the county seat on his lands." The city of Charlotte was thus located on a portion of tract No. 3, of the "Selwyn Grant." Mecklenburg County, of which Charlotte is the capital, is located in tract No. 3, of the "Selwyn grant," and was created by act of the Colonial Legislature of 1762; it then included what are now the counties of Mecklenburg and Cabarrus, and parts of Union and Iredell counties. Henry Eustace McCulloh, so frequently mentioned, was of Rowan County, a son of Henry McCulloh, the London merchant, and the agent and "attorney-in-fact" for George A. Selwyn in Carolina.

Neither Colonel John Selwyn nor his son, George Augustus, ever visited their vast possessions in the New World, but they evidenced some interest in them as is shown in their correspondence and through the activity of their agents.

In George A. Selwyn's letters, there is frequent mention of Lord Cornwallis (whom he knew personally) and his movements in Carolina and, it is certain, he watched the military events of the Revolution as closely as was possible, considering the times and great distance.

The home of the Selwyn family was a charming country estate near Matson, a small village on the spur of the Cotswold hills overlooking the Severn Valley. Colonel *John* Selwyn was a man of education and ability, of large influence, ample means, and well known in the courts of the Georges. He was aide-de-camp to the Duke of Marlborough at the Battle of Blenheim and served his country in other official capacities. Sir Robert Walpole was one of his intimate friends, as well as other men of note, and young Horace Walpole was a frequent visitor in his home. Colonel Selwyn married Mary, a daughter of General Farrington, of Kent; she was a woman of unusual beauty, vivacity and wit, and as a "Woman of the Bed Chamber of Queen Caroline" was well known and much admired in court circles. Horace Walpole wrote of her as "Mrs. Selwyn, mother of the famous George, and herself of much vivacity and very pretty." It is said that George inherited his wit, for which he was famous, from his clever mother. Colonel Selwyn and his oldest son, died the same year, 1751, and through this double bereavement George Augustus, the younger son, inherited the large landed interests in Carolina, as well as the family estate in England. George Augustus was born at his father's country home, August 11, 1719. His early school days were spent at Eton, where among his classmates were Gray, the poet, and Horace Walpole. He went from Eton to Hart College, Oxford, but made no record as a student at either place. In 1745, he was forced to withdraw from Oxford without taking his degree, to escape expulsion for desecrating a chalice, using it for a drinking cup at a students' party.

He entered parliament in 1747, where he remained until 1780, a silent and inactive member, never giving himself seriously to affairs of State. He had fallen heir to the family estates in 1751, and had sufficient income to support him handsomely, so never exerted himself over his business or landed interests, delegating this irksome work to agents.

Selwyn obtained several sinecures, one of which was Register of the Court of Chancery at Barbadoes, and Surveyor-General of the works. He early became a member of the leading London clubs, where he was familiarly known as "Bosky." George Selwyn's fame seems to rest on his unusual wit and humor, for which he was widely known and frequently quoted; he filled a conspicuous place in the fashionable life of his day and was intimate with statesmen, politicians and literary men, as well as the court circle, and his wit and *bon mots* were enjoyed in the most exclusive and fashionable drawing-rooms of London. He frequently visited Paris and spent much time there. When the Duke of Bedford, with his large suite, spent some months in Paris while the Duke negotiated the treaty known as the "Peace of Paris," Selwyn was of the party and was such a close friend that the Duke presented him with the pen with which the treaty was signed.

Horace Walpole, from their Eton school days, was a devoted friend, their intimacy being life-long and to him we are much indebted for our knowledge of Selwyn.

In his later years, Selwyn almost abandoned his country estate and spent much time in London, at Castle Howard, or visited some of the great houses which were always open to him, and where he met many of England's most brilliant men and women.

Selwyn's life was in a sense lonely, for he never married and in his last years he had no near relatives. Some biographers tell of a romance and of an unnamed child who filled his thoughts and life in his last years, but that peculiar story has no place in this brief sketch of his life.



One unusual trait of Selwyn was his strange passion for attending the executions of criminals, all of which were public in England at that time. He seldom missed an execution, but in this gruesome pastime he was not alone, for Boswell, Walpole and other great men kept him company.

Selwyn was a prolific letter writer, his most famous correspondence being preserved in what is known as the "Castle Howard Collection." His spelling is not always above reproach, nor is his mode of expression elegant, but he gives an interesting glimpse of that period of English life. Two interesting books have been published about George Selwyn; one in four volumes is entitled, "George Selwyn and His Contemporaries;" the other is entitled "George Selwyn, His Life and Letters."

Selwyn has been called "the first wit and humorist of his day"; many witticisms have been credited to him, but many of them appear flat and stale at this distant date, as the man, circumstances and time, gave them buoyancy and pith. One is quoted here as an example of his wit, and it will still bring a laugh. When Lord Farley crossed over the Channel to escape his many creditors, Selwyn remarked that "it was a *passover* not much relished by the Jews!"

There are several portraits of Selwyn still to be seen in England, probably the most famous one is at Castle Howard. It was painted about 1770 by his friend, Sir Joshua Reynolds, and includes another friend of theirs, Frederic, Fifth Earl of Carlisle, and, also, Selwyn's much beloved dog, Raton. Once when it was rumored that Sir Joshua was a candidate for a political office, Selwyn remarked: "He might very well succeed, for he is the ablest man I know *on canvass!*" The Reynold's portrait shows Selwyn a handsome man, with periwig, and dressed in the elegant and expensive style of that day, with velvet suit, silk hose, real lace frills and fine stock buckle.

Several years before his death, Selwyn's health became impaired and he spent much time "taking cures" and con-

sulting medical men. He gradually grew worse and returned to London for the last time shortly before Christmas in 1790, where he died at his home, Cleveland Row, St. James, on January 25, 1791. He was sincerely mourned by many warm friends, one of whom (Storr) wrote to Lord Auckland, "The loss is not only a private one to his friends, but really a public one to Society in general."

The name of the large landowner, Selwyn, has disappeared from his former possessions in Carolina, except in Charlotte, where one of her finest hostelrys and one of her most beautiful boulevards bears the name of "Selwyn" in memory of the first recognized landowner in Charlotte and Mecklenburg County.



## An Educational Practice in Colonial North Carolina

---

By EDGAR W. KNIGHT.

---

Although North Carolina developed before 1860 the most creditable system of public education to be found in any of the states which seceded from the Union, her intellectual and educational growth was very slow during the colonial period. This tardy development was due to conditions under which the colony was settled and to others which lent themselves very sparingly to the encouragement of educational enterprises. Especially was this true of the period from 1663, when settlements first began to be made in the region around Albemarle Sound, to 1728, when the transfer from proprietary to royal control of the colony was made.

One of the conditions which retarded educational development was the slow growth of population. The earliest settlers in North Carolina migrated from the northern colony of Virginia between 1650 and 1675, not as religious refugees, as has been supposed, but for economic advantage. After 1663, however, when the intolerant and illegal government of Berkeley in Virginia was resisted, others came for political reasons, and the colony soon found itself accommodating "rogues, runaways and rebels" who refused to tolerate Berkeley and his tyranny. In 1670 immigrants were encouraged by the promise of the assembly of exemption from taxation for one year and protection for five years from suits for debts made before coming into the colony. But these attractions induced but few. When Drummond was appointed the first governor of Albemarle in 1663 his commission extended over 1600 square miles of territory which contained perhaps not more than fifteen hundred people. In 1675 there were probably 4,000 people in the colony, less

than three to the square mile, and in 1728 the entire white population probably numbered less than 13,000.

From the beginning of the settlement the tendency was towards rural rather than urban communities, the mild climate and the fertile soil both contributing to a stimulation of rural life. The earliest settlers took up large tracts of land on the watercourses, which furnished practically the only means of communication, and agriculture soon became the most promising pursuit of the colonists. The dangerous coasts and poor harbors made the colony difficult of access and the commercial interests of the people were thus retarded. Moreover, there were frequent complaints against the unsatisfactory government and conflicts between the inhabitants and the proprietors or their representatives "who reckoned the lives of the colonists only in quit rents and taxes." Occasional religious dissensions were also unfavorable to educational and intellectual activities, and the need for schools was not keenly felt by those in authority. The educational philosophy of Seventeenth century England, "that the great body of the people were to obey and not to govern, and that the social status of unborn generations was already fixed," was now and later widespread and persistent. Besides, the re-enactment for the colony of the English Schism Act of 1714, after it had been repealed in England, was unduly exasperating and added to other ecclesiastical evils which followed the establishment of the English Church in North Carolina.

In spite of these unfavorable conditions, however, there is occasional evidence of local effort to foster education, though there were but few early attempts to promote formal intellectual and literary training. The poor law and apprenticeship system, which was so popular in Virginia where it was directly inherited from England, was in use in North Carolina also. In the latter colony, however, this system seems not to have been so extensive as in Virginia which was more nearly like the mother country. In Virginia it was so widely

extended and such a popular practice that the *ante bellum* educational system of that state seems a gradual evolution from it. This poor law practice and apprenticeship system form a unique educational scheme; but in order to understand the popular mental attitude to the class of dependents entrusted to its care—an attitude which the system itself reflects—it is necessary to consider that education is a term of varying meaning. The term now generally means an expansion of the mental faculties through a specific organized course of a more or less literary nature. For the more prosperous part of society a “certain tincture of letters” has, in the popular mind, always been regarded as essential, but this particular form of training has not been held in high esteem for the poorer classes. The popular view has been that formal literary training was not requisite to the poor youth of the community, and parents or guardians of such youth appeared more concerned about a practical training of their children or wards in those occupations and crafts through which they were later to maintain themselves than they were interested in “book learning.”

It is through the apprenticeship system that one form of local educational effort may be seen in North Carolina in colonial times. That the system was in operation very early may be seen from the following records of February, 1695, and of April, 1698:

“Upon ye Peticon of Honell Thomas Harvey esqr Ordered yt Wm ye son of Timothy Pead late of the County of Albe-marle Deed being left destitute be bound unto ye sd Thomas Harvey esqr and Sarah his wife untill he be at ye age of twenty one years and the said Thomas Harvey to teach him to read.” Three years later the records of Perquimans precinct court show that Elizabeth Gardner, “ye Rellock William Gardner desesed presented his selfe before ye Court to bind hir Son William Gardner to ye Honbl Govener Thomas Harvi or his Heires Thay Ingagen to Learn him to Reed Which In or to Was doon till he comes to ye Age of Twenty

on yeares he being five years ould now a fortnite before Cristmas."<sup>1</sup>

Four years later, at the January, 1699, term of the same court, we find the following orders:

"Jonathan Taylor And William Taylor Orfens Being Left destressed ordered that they be Bound to William Long And Sarah His Wife Till they Come of Age."

"Thomas Tailer Orfen being Left destressed ordered that He be bound to John Lawrence And Hannah his Wife till he Comes of age."

"Mare Tayler Orfen being Left destressed ordered that Shee be bound to Mr Caleb Calleway And Elisabeth his Wife till Shee Comes of Age."

"Thomas Hallom Orfen being Left destressed ordered that he be bound to ffrancis ffoster And Hannah his Wife till he Comes of Age."<sup>2</sup>

These four examples are the bare court orders and nothing is said about the maintenance and education of the children bound. Indentures covering each case were likely signed later by the guardian and the court which appointed him. Ordinarily these indentures called for the education and maintenance, according to his "rank and degree," of the orphan bound or apprenticed. This meant to feed, clothe, lodge, and to provide "accommodations fit and necessary" for the child, and to teach or cause him to be taught to read and write, as well as a suitable trade. This was the customary agreement required by the court. The absence in the cases above of these features is hardly proof that they were here neglected. The indentures were likely formally signed later, as appears to have been the case in the following agreement made in March, 1703, in the same court:

"Upon a petition of Gabriell Newby for two orphants left him by Mary Hancock the late wife of Thoms Hancocke and proveing the same by the oathes of Eliz. Steward and her

<sup>1</sup> Col. Rec., I, pp. 448, 495.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid., p. 522.

daughter the Court doe agree to bind them unto him he Ingagen & promising before the Court to doe his endeavours to learne the boy the trade of a wheelwright and likewise give him at the expiration of his time one ear old heifer and to ye girle at her freedome one Cow and Calfe besides the Custome of the Country and has promised at ye next orphans Court to Signe Indentures for that effect."<sup>3</sup>

At the October, 1704, term of the same court Nathan Sutton petitioned to be appointed guardian for Richard Sutton, the orphan son of George Sutton, who was probably Nathan's relative, but the petition was rejected. A year later, however, he was appointed guardian for the boy. The same court which appointed him guardian heard complaints made by the "orphans of George Sutton deced That Abyham Warren their Guardian hath given Imoderate Correccoon & deprived them of Competent Sustenance." The result was that the court appointed Dennis Macclendon the guardian of Elizabeth and Deborah Sutton, and Nathan Sutton guardian for Richard.<sup>4</sup>

A few more examples of the system will throw additional light on its operation in North Carolina:

"Upon petition of George Bell setting forth that he had two servts bound to him by the precinet Court of Craven in ye month of July 17, 12/13 namely Charles Coggdaile and George Coggdaile as by Indenture may Appeare. And further that ye Court afsd have pretended to sett ye said Servt at Liberty as he is informed by reason that they could not perfectly read and write when as the time of their servitude is not half expired And he further claimes that during the time they were with him they were well used and much time allowed them to perfect them in their reading and writeing and that he intended to instruct them in ye building of Vessells Therefore prays that in regard there is no other allegation made appeare agt him they may remain with him

<sup>3</sup> Ibid., p. 577.

<sup>4</sup> Ibid., pp. 613, 626.



till ye time of the Indenture Specified be expired &c. . . .” It was ordered that the servants remain with their master in accordance with their former indentures.<sup>5</sup>

The records of Chowan precinct for August, 1716, show the following:

“Upon Petition of John Avery Shewing that sometime in August 1713 ye said Avery being in Prince George’s County in Virginia met with one John Fox aged abt fifteen years who being Desireous to live in North Carolina to learn to be a Ship Carpenter bound himselfe an apprentice to ye said John Avery for Six years before one Stith Bolling Gent one of her Majties Justices of ye said County as is practicable in ye Governmt of Virginia whereupon ye said Avery brought ye said Fox into North Carolina with him and Caused the sd John his said Apprentice to be Taught and Instructed to read and write and was at other Charges and Expenses concerning him and haveing now made him serviceable and usefull to him in ye Occupation of Shipp Carpenter to ye Great Content and Seeming Satisfaction of the said Foxes Mother and Father in Law one Cary Godby of Chowan Precinct But ye Said Cary intending to profitt and advantage himselfe by the Labour and usefulness of ye said John Fox hath advised the said Fox to withdraw himselfe from yor petitionrs service and to bring along his Indentures of apprenticeship & is now Entertained and harboured by the said Cary Godby and therefore prayes that the sd Fox may be apprehended and brought before this Board their to be dealt with according to law.” Fox was ordered to return to his master.<sup>6</sup>

A record of November, 1716, in Chowan precinct court, shows that the practice applied to girls as well as to boys: “Upon the Peticon of John Swain praying that Elizabeth Swain his sister an Orphane Girle bound by the Precinct Court of Chowan to John Worley Esqr may in the time of

---

<sup>5</sup> Ibid., II, p. 172.

<sup>6</sup> Ibid., II, p. 241.



her service be taught to read by her said Master Ordered, that she be taught to read.”<sup>7</sup>

These examples are sufficient to show the principal features of the system as it operated in the colony of North Carolina. If the records were complete earlier and more representative examples would doubtless be in evidence. By the practice in North Carolina poor children were bound to masters and guardians were appointed by the court for orphans, the masters and guardians agreeing with the court, which had general care of this dependent class, to teach the wards a trade or occupation and also to read and write. When an orphan possessed an estate the guardian was entitled to remuneration for administering it, but if the estate yielded no profit the master agreed to maintain and educate him for his services. Under these conditions the child probably took his place in the household on an equality with the other children, and perhaps received similar educational advantages.

Although the practice of apprenticing and binding orphans and poor children under the conditions described was more or less extensive in the colony at an early date, no legislation seems to have been enacted on the subject until 1715. In that year a law was passed by which no children were allowed to be bound, except by the precinct court which was empowered to “grant letters of tuition or guardianship to such persons as they shall think proper” for caring for the “education of all orphans & for taking care of their estates . . .” The law required that “all Orphans shall be Educated & provided for according to their Rank & degree out of the Income or Interest of their Estate & Stock if the same will be sufficient Otherwise such Orphans shall be bound Apprentice to some Handycraft Trade (the Master or Mistress of such Orphan not being of the Profession called Quakers) till they shall come of Age unless some of kin to such Orphan will undertake to maintain & Educate him or them for the in-

---

<sup>7</sup> Ibid., p. 266.

terest or income of his or her Estate without Diminution of the Principal whether the same be great or small . . .”<sup>8</sup>

The principal features of this legislation are similar to the features of a law on the same subject in Virginia. Close contact with that colony, from which many of the early settlers of North Carolina came and in which the poor and apprenticeship laws formed practically the only educational system for the poorer classes, may have influenced the gradual introduction of apprenticeship practices into North Carolina. In Virginia one of the first pieces of apprenticeship legislation which has a public educational aspect was that of March, 1643, when the county courts enjoined the overseers of the poor and guardians of orphans “to educate and instruct them according to their best endeavors in Christian religion and in the rudiments of learning and to provide for them necessities according to the competence of their estates . . .”<sup>9</sup>

By an act of 1705, it was ordered that when the estate of any orphan was so small “that no person will maintain him for the profits thereof, then such orphan shall be bound apprentice to some handicraft trade, or mariner, until he shall attain to the age of one and twenty. And the master of each such orphan shall be obliged to teach him to read and write; and at the expiration of his servitude, to pay and allow him in like manner as is appointed for servants, by indenture or custom.”<sup>10</sup>

Another example will serve to make clearer the similarity of legislation on this subject in the two colonies and the probable influence of the law of Virginia on the law in North Carolina. In 1748 it was enacted in the former colony that whenever the profits of an orphan’s estate were insufficient to maintain him, such an orphan was to be bound apprentice, “every male to some tradesman, merchant, mariner, or other person approved by the court, until he shall attain the age

<sup>8</sup> *Ibid.*, XXIII, pp. 70-71.

<sup>9</sup> 18 Charles I. Hening, *Statutes*, I, p. 261.

<sup>10</sup> 4 Anne. Hening, *Statutes*, III, p. 375.

of one and twenty years, and every female to some suitable trade or employment, 'till her age of eighteen years; and the master or mistress of every such servant shall find and provide for him or her, diet, clothes, lodgings and accommodations fit and necessary, and shall teach, or cause him or her to be taught to read and write, and at the expiration of his or her apprenticeship, shall pay every such servant, the like allowance as is by law appointed for servants by indenture or custom . . ."<sup>11</sup>

Seven years later, in September, 1755, there was enacted in North Carolina a law regulating the estates of orphans and their guardians. The preamble of the law explained the need for further legislation on this subject: "Whereas, for want of proper laws for regulating guardians, and the management of orphans, their interests and estates have been greatly abused and their education very much neglected, for prevention whereof for the future, be it enacted . . ." By this law the churchwardens of every parish were to furnish to the justices of the orphans' court, at its annual session, the names of all children without guardians. Failure to perform this duty was punishable by a fine of "ten pounds proclamation money each." The court was to appoint guardians for all such children and these guardians were to make reports to the court of their wards and apprentices. When the court "shall know or be informed that any guardian or guardians by them respectfully appointed, do waste or convert the money or estate of any orphan to his or her own use, or do in any manner mismanage the same . . . or neglects to educate or maintain any orphan according to his or her degree and circumstances," the court was then empowered to establish other rules and regulations for the better management of such estate and "for the better educating and maintaining such orphans." When the profits of any orphan's estate "shall be more than sufficient to maintain and educate him," the surplus was to be invested on good and sufficient security.

---

<sup>11</sup> 22 George II. Hening. Statutes, V, pp. 499 ff.

But if the estate "shall be of so small value that no person will educate or maintain him or her for the profits thereof, such orphan shall by the direction of the court be bound apprentice, every male to some tradesman, merchant, mariner, or other person approved by the court, until he shall attain the age of twenty-one years, and every female to some suitable employment till her age of eighteen years, and the master or mistress of every such servant shall find and provide for him or her diet, clothes, lodging, and accommodations fit and necessary, and shall teach, or cause him or her to be taught, to read and write, and at the expiration of his or her apprenticeship shall pay every such servant the like allowance as is by law appointed for servants by indenture or custom, and on refusal shall be compelled thereto in like manner . . . ." The act was to remain in force for five years from passage.

In April, 1760, a law similar to the law of 1755 was enacted, and two years later we find further legislation on the subject of the maintenance and education of orphans. Additional legislation was justified, according to the preamble, by the "experience that the court of each respective county, exercising the power of regulating the education of orphans, and the management of their estates, have proved of singular service to them." This law differed from previous legislation in one essential point. Formerly the churchwardens of every parish were required to report to the court the names of orphans and poor children without guardians and masters. By this act that duty was transferred to the grand jury of every county. Provision was further made for an orphans' court to be held by the justices of every inferior court of pleas and quarter sessions. This court was to be held once a year when accounts of guardians were to be exhibited and complaints heard.

The educational features of the act have a certain interest. The guardian of any orphan whose estate furnished the orphan an economic competency was to supervise his education

and maintenance. When the estate was of such small value that "no person will educate and maintain him or her for the profits thereof" the orphan was to be bound apprentice by the court, "every male to some tradesman, merchant, mariner, or other person approved by the court, until he shall attain to the age of twenty-one years; and every female to some suitable employment, 'till her age of eighteen years; and also such court may, in like manner, bind apprentice all free base born children; and every such female child being a mulatto or mestee, until she shall attain the age of twenty-one years; and the master or mistress of every such apprentice, shall find and provide for him or her diet, clothes, lodging, accommodations, fit and necessary; and shall teach or cause him or her to be taught to read and write; and at the expiration of his or her apprenticeship, shall pay every such apprentice the like allowance as is by law appointed, for servants by indenture of custom; and on refusal, shall be compelled thereto, in like manner; and if on complaint made to the inferior court of pleas and quarter sessions, it shall appear that any such apprentice is ill-used, or not taught the trade, profession or employment to which he or she is bound, it shall be lawful for such court to remove and bind him or her to such other person or persons as they shall think fit."

With the exception of certain vestry acts this remained until the national period practically the only legislation governing apprentices and the poor in the colony of North Carolina. The chief of these acts was passed in January, 1764, and described the duties of vestrymen in making provision for the clergy and the poor. By this act the vestrymen of each parish were "directed and required" annually between Easter and November "to lay a poll tax on the taxable persons in their parish, not exceeding ten shillings, for building churches and chapels, paying the ministers' salary, purchasing a glebe . . . encouraging schools, maintaining the poor, paying clerks and readers, etc."<sup>12</sup> No important

<sup>12</sup> Col. Rec., XXIII, p. 601.



changes were made in this legislation until 1777 when an act was passed transferring to "overseers of the poor" certain powers and duties which hitherto had devolved on the vestrymen.<sup>13</sup>

Here may be seen an important change in the conception of educational control. By the act of 1762, already described, the duty of reporting to the justices of the local court the names of orphans and poor children without guardians or masters was transferred from the churchwardens to the county grand jury. By the vestry act of 1777 similar authority was transferred from the vestrymen to the "overseers of the poor." The educational significance of these changes is important; now the authority for controlling the maintenance and education of the poor is transferred from the church to the state. From this change is gradually developed the idea that caring for and "educating" the poor of the community is a state function. This general change is also clearly marked in the legislation dealing with the poor in Virginia.<sup>14</sup>

In the main the foregoing describes the practice in North Carolina of apprenticing poor children and orphans whose economic competency was insufficient to maintain and educate them. The custom was not so extensive and popular as in Virginia which was more directly influenced by conditions and practices in England. Scarcity of evidence on the subject in North Carolina may be accounted for by the fact that children apprenticed by the court probably took their places in the homes of their guardians or masters on conditions of maintenance and education usually allowed other members of the household. The master was probably required to give his apprentice practically the same care and attention given his own children; for when it appeared that the apprentice was ill-used, not properly provided with "accommodations fit

---

<sup>13</sup> *Ibid.*, XXIV, p. 93.

<sup>14</sup> See Knight, *The Evolution of Public Education in Virginia—Colonial Theory and Practice*, in *The Sewanee Review* for January, 1916.



and necessary," or not properly taught as agreed to in the indentures, he was removed and re-apprenticed to some other master approved by the court. This important feature of the apprenticeship practice seems to have been a regular requirement.

A study of the system in North Carolina is not only suggestive but leads to certain interesting conclusions. From it we may see that as early as 1695 the practice required provision for teaching the apprentice to read and write, and that the court released apprentices when "they could not perfectly read and write." It is probable that this requirement was universal in the colony, though abundant evidence on the extent of the custom of apprenticing is unfortunately not accessible. We have also seen that the apprenticeship legislation in the colony of Virginia influenced similar legislation in North Carolina, as the act of 1748 in the former, and of 1755 in the latter colony are evidence. It also appeared that the practice in North Carolina applied to orphans, poor children, free illegitimate children, to girls as well as to boys, and to illegitimate female mulattoes and mestees. Moreover, by act of 1715, requiring that "all Orphans shall be Educated & provided for according to their Rank and degree," the existence of schools or other means of intellectual training is implied. The language of the law of 1755, "neglects to educate or maintain any orphan according to his or her degree and circumstance," and that of the law of 1762, "regulating the education of orphans, and the management of their estates, have proved of singular service to them," and "educate and maintain," may be considered additional evidence that certain educational facilities, however meager they may have been, were available for this dependent class. It is hoped that future study of the local court records of the period will add to the evidence already gathered.

## Biographical and Genealogical Memoranda

---

Compiled and Edited by MRS. E. E. MOFFITT.

---

### CHIEF JUSTICE WALTER CLARK.

A sketch of Judge Clark is to be found in *THE BOOKLET*, Vol. IX, No. 3.

### DR. HENRY ELLIOT SHEPHERD.

Dr. Shepherd's article in this number of *THE BOOKLET* is most opportune and serves to keep in mind the part played by North Carolina in the President's Cabinet. Among the five who have filled that important position the name and fame of James Cochran Dobbin will be memorable, as it was during his administration in 1854 that the treaty between the American Government and Japan was consummated.

Dr. Shepherd hails from one of the oldest settlements in North Carolina, born at Fayetteville, N. C., the head of navigation on the Cape Fear, January 27, 1844. His father was the late Jesse George Shepherd, one of the most accomplished lawyers, jurists and gentlemen that North Carolina has given to the world, who died in the flower of his manhood in January, 1869, at the early age of forty-eight.

His mother was Catherine Isabella Dobbin, sister of James C. Dobbin, Secretary of the Navy in the Cabinet of Mr. Pierce, 1853-1857, whose crowded years of glorious life have scarcely a parallel in the annals of our Southern civilization. Mr. Dobbin died August 4, 1857 at the age of forty-four.

Besides the lines of Dobbin and Shepherd, other lines represented in the family of our subject are the McQueens of Chatham, the Elliots and Smiths of Cumberland and Harnett; the Whitfields, the Bryans and the Camerons, all

of whom trace their origin to the Colonial period of our Carolina story.

Mr. Shepherd spent his early days in Fayetteville under the care of most competent instructors, added to this his daily contact with father and uncle. Each of these gentlemen embodied in his life and character the purest ideals, the tenderest graces of a day that is dead. He was sent to Davidson College, from there to the Military Academy at Charlotte, which was established by Major D. H. Hill in the year 1859. At both of these institutions he was brought into relation with this strong, heroic soul, under whom he was to serve in more than one campaign during the great war drama of 1861-1865.

In October, 1860, he was admitted into the University of Virginia. Here he devoted his energies to the literary, classical and historical courses, and in several of these he attained honorable and distinguished rank.

When the image of grim-visaged war loomed upon the South in 1861, he was found in the field, though hardly seventeen. He served under his former teacher, General D. H. Hill, at Yorktown, in the Fall of 1861. He served as drill-master of raw recruits at Raleigh and other points. In the Spring of 1862 he was advanced to rank of first lieutenant of infantry in the Forty-third North Carolina Troops. He was probably at the time of his appointment the youngest commissioned officer in the armies of the Confederacy.

The encouragement and commendation as soldier and scholar received from his great instructor and commander, General D. H. Hill, is held in sacred memory by Dr. Shepherd.

He was dangerously wounded at Gettysburg, July 3, 1863, and upon the retreat of Lee's army fell into the hands of the enemy. A long and cruel captivity followed. At last he found his way to his desolate home after Sherman's carnival of ruin had swept over Fayetteville.

After the war Mr. Shepherd taught for one year a school at Louisburg, N. C., in connection with Mr. Matthew S. Davis, the honored head of this classical Academy.

In the next year, 1868, he made his way to Baltimore and in a short time was elected to the Chair of History and English in the City College, an institution that represented the highest or final stage of the public school system of Baltimore.

In 1875 he was made Superintendent of Instruction, an executive position involving far-reaching care and responsibility. He resigned this trust in 1882 to assume the presidency of the College of Charleston, South Carolina, to which he had been called without the slightest solicitation on his part. He restored the College of Charleston to vigorous life at a time when it had fallen into absolute extinction and left it in a flourishing condition. He withdrew from this latter position in 1897 and returning to Baltimore engaged more earnestly than ever in intellectual pursuits—authorship criticism, lecturing, original research in literary and historical spheres.

As a College Professor, College President and Superintendent of Instruction his work has been marked from its earliest stages by the vital power of ceaseless progress in all the higher phases of intellectual development. Dr. Shepherd has contributed to the literature of his vocation at least five or six volumes, several of which have won distinction, not in America alone, but in countries beyond the sea. The History of the English Language; Historical Reader; Advanced Grammar of the English Language; Educational Reports and Reviews; "A Study of Edgar Allen Poe"; Contributions to the American Journal of Philology; Contributions to the New English Dictionary, Oxford; A Commentary Upon Tennyson's "In Memoriam"; Essays on Modern Language Notes; Life of Robert E. Lee.

This enumeration by no means represents the total of Mr. Shepherd's creative work in history, literature and educa-

tion. He has now in contemplation a life of Sir Walter Raleigh, designed especially to portray the intellectual and literary characteristics of his brilliant and versatile genius.

(The above extracts from Ashe's Biographical History of North Carolina).

"The Life of Robert E. Lee," one of the largest works of Dr. Shepherd, deserved especial emphasis, and in which the whole South must be interested. Having served honorably in the Confederate Army, and having known General Lee personally, Dr. Shepherd was in every way fitted to do this work, which is a notable contribution to the fast growing Lee literature.

North Carolina has reason to be proud of her son. Though transplanted to another State his love for the land of his nativity remains strong and loyal. We may predict that his work on Sir Walter Raleigh will awaken to greater activity the project of erecting in Raleigh a monument to this valiant knight and great colonizer.

Dr. Shepherd is vigorous and robust in health, still pursuing, still achieving, and whose work has been most cordially recognized in both Europe and America. Shall not North Carolina hold fast to one whose supreme ambition has ever been to contribute to the glory of the South and especially to his native State?

#### MISS VIOLET GRAHAM ALEXANDER.

One will not be surprised to find the great-granddaughter of John McKnitt Alexander, playing the roll of patriot; interested as she is, in research work, concerning the early history of North Carolina. Her article on George Selwyn, that first disturber of the "Hornets Nest," the sting from which gave warning to the invader to our country's liberties, finds a welcome in the columns of *THE BOOKLET*, the object of which is to preserve important facts in North Carolina history not widely known.



Miss Violet Alexander was born in Charlotte, North Carolina. She is the daughter of Sydenham B. Alexander; an A. B., of the University of North Carolina, 1860, also a gallant Confederate who served in Company K, First Bethel Regiment, that noted aggregation of men of Mecklenburg and six other western counties. He was promoted several times in the army, was State Senator 1879, '83, '85, '87 and 1901. He was the first advocate of road improvement in North Carolina; member of the Fifty-second and Fifty-third Congresses (1891-1895); President of State Grange and of North Carolina Farmers' Alliance and Industrial Union; prominent in agricultural advancement, results in evidence all over the State.

Miss Alexander is a descendant of many of the early settlers of Mecklenburg, and patriots who figured so largely in the War of the Revolution, viz.: the Caldwells, Brevards, Davidsons, Osbornes, Grahams and Wilsons, whose names are recorded in history. She is the great-granddaughter of Samuel Wilson, who came to North Carolina in 1740; a delegate to the Provincial Congress from Mecklenburg, 1773; delegate to the Convention of Mecklenburg, May 20, 1775, and a "signer" of that document which has made that county famous.

Miss Alexander was educated at the Mary Baldwin School, Staunton, Va., where she made a special study of History, Literature and French; she has traveled much in Europe, and in our own country, Western States, Old Mexico, Canada and Cuba. She is a frequent contributor to the "Charlotte Observer;" has compiled a "History of Spratt Burying Ground" (which dates back to 1765), published in NORTH CAROLINA BOOKLET, January, 1916. She has written the following: "*Confederate Navy Yard, Charlotte, North Carolina, 1862-1865*," published by Southern Historical Society, Vol. XL, Richmond, Va.; "*First Court in Mecklenburg County, North Carolina*," published by North Carolina Society of Colonial Dames, 1914; "*The Old Cemetery—A*



*Revolutionary Grave Yard,"* published in Charlotte Observer, June, 1916; besides many other historical articles in newspapers.

Miss Alexander is a member of several patriotic organizations, viz.: Charlotte Museum Association; North Carolina Literary and Historical Association, Raleigh, N. C.; Colonial Dames of North Carolina; Mecklenburg Chapter D. A. R.; Signers Chapter (one of its organizers), charter member Stonewall Jackson Chapter U. D. C., and has held office in last three organizations.

As will be seen Miss Alexander is not only interested in the Old Time, but in the New. She was instrumental in placing a tablet on the site of the Confederate Navy Yard, Charlotte; and in placing tablet in Capitol at Raleigh, memorializing the patriots of Mecklenburg; and chairman of both committees, and assisted in designing both tablets. She designed the pin of the "Signers Chapter," and it is proudly worn by its loyal daughters.

Miss Alexander is a notable example of a continuity of qualities possessed by a noble ancestry, and as an exemplar of those timid but capable scions of a like noble race, who, content with the achievements of their ancestors, are apathetic and timid in recording and transmitting to posterity, undisputed traditions that would reflect on the glory of the State. May the pace set by Miss Alexander have many followers and thus aid the Daughters of the Revolution in its effort to preserve authentic North Carolina History through its organ, THE NORTH CAROLINA BOOKLET, which so far has struggled through fifteen years without compensation to its editors, but upheld by the most intelligent, reliable, painstaking historians of this period. Through these THE BOOKLET is encouraged and inspired to continue its valuable work now entering its sixteenth year.

## EDGAR WALLACE KNIGHT.

Born near Woodland, Northampton County, North Carolina, April 9, 1886; attended the public schools of Northampton County and Trinity Park School (Durham, N. C.); A. B., Trinity College, 1909; A. M., Trinity College, 1911; master in history and English, Trinity Park School from 1909 to 1911; instructor in history in the East Carolina Teachers' Training School, summer 1910; Graduate Scholar Columbia University, 1911-1912; Fellow in Columbia University, 1912-13; Ph. D. Columbia, 1913; professor in the department of education in Trinity College since 1913. Author:

"The Influence of Reconstruction on Education in the South," (New York, 1913); "Some Principles of Teaching," (Boston, 1915).

Frequent contributor to magazines on educational and historical subjects. Among his most recent articles which have attracted attention are:

"Some Fallacies Concerning the History of Public Education in the South," "Reconstruction and Education in Virginia"; "The Evolution of Public Education in Virginia"; "The Peabody Fund and Its Early Operation in North Carolina." These articles appeared in the South Atlantic Quarterly, and in the Sewanee Review.

The above recital of Prof. Knight's achievements is indeed remarkable for one not yet thirty years of age, and may we be allowed to predict even greater, as the years roll by. North Carolina may well reckon on this scholarly writer, who, so far, is reflecting credit on his native State.

## Genealogical Department

---

Compiled by MISS SYBIL HYATT.

---

### LENOIR COUNTY PARKERS.

In 1736 or 37, John Parker moved to Craven County, probably to a place near the section, that is now Woodington, Lenoir County. The similarity of family names indicates that he came from the Chowan section.

The Colonial Records mention two grants of land, one on September 10, 1737; the other February 20, 1739.

All the records covering the name Parker in this section of the State have been examined. The most pertinent records, those of Lenoir County, have been destroyed by fire.

The following abstracts are from records of deeds in Craven County:

December 25, 1756.—Jacob Blount to Joseph Parker. Between Little and Great Contentnea creeks. Test: John Benson, Jonas Griffin.

---

July 26, 1757.—John Stanaland to Zenas Parker. North side of Trent River. Test: John Frank, Martin Worsley.

December 2, 1758.—John Parker to Zenas Parker. North side of Trent, next John Parker's line. Part of patent surveyed for John Parker, November 26, 1736. Test: John Frank, Thomas Wood.

---

February 10, 1759.—Zenas Parker to John Hudler. North Side of Trent River, near George Carnegee's land. Test: Samuel Colvel, John Parker.

---

January 29, 1773.—John Parker, Planter to John Koonce. Part of a parcel of land, granted unto a certain

John Parker on February 21, 1738. North side of Trent River.

---

January 23, 1799.—Martha Parker to James Meeks. West side of North West Creek.

---

The following abstracts are from deeds in Duplin County:

February 16, 1760.—Mary Parker to Isaac Huggins. Grant to her, September 27, 1756, near John Yarborough's line. Test: John Yarborough, Joseph Eason, James Snell. Clerk of the Court: John Dickson.

---

December 30, 1768.—William Roberts, of Duplin, to Gabriel Parker, of Johnston County. East side of Great Coheary. Test: Matthew Parker, Robert Parker, Providence Parker.

---

February 17, 1770.—Amos Parker and wife Elizabeth to William Jones. East side of Muddy Creek.

---

September 27, 1771.—Jeremiah Simmons to John Parker. Joins Parker's own land, west side of Little Coharie. Test: John Owens, John Davis.

---

January 17, 1772.—Gabriel Parker, of Johnston County, to son, Matthew Parker. Deed of gift. East side of Great Coheary Swamp. Bought December 30, 1768. Test: David Holliman, Hubbard Parker.

---

November 28, 1772.—Henry Fountain, planter to John Parker, planter. East side of North East River, north side of Muddy Creek. Test: Richard Williams, Stephen Williams.

July 14, 1774.—Amos Parker to Solomon Parker. East side of northeast branch of Cape Fear, north side of Muddy Creek. Test: James Hollingsworth, Charity Goff, Stephen Hollingsworth.

---

July 29, 1775.—Matthew Parker to Armager Hall. East side of Great Coharie. Deed of gift from father. Test: Jesse McEndon, Joseph Harris.

---

1775.—John Parker to Ezekiel Allen. South side of Muddy Creek. Test: John Williams, Benjamin Brown, William Southerland.

---

October 20, 1778.—Jonathan Parker to Matthew Powell. West side of Six Runs. Test: Joseph Register, Thomas Goff.

---

There are several deeds recorded in Johnston County, which mention Gabriel Parker of Johnston.

---

A will of John Parker filed at Wilmington devises land on main road from Wilmington to Raleigh, through Duplin and Sampson to sons, Owen and Robert Parker, to daughter, Julia Parker, and to second wife, Ann Maria. He states he leaves this to the second wife's children, as the first's had been provided for.

---

Vol. XXII, page 318, of the Colonial Records, December 10, 1754, Returns for Craven 1756, "The List of Gentlemen Solgers" gives the names John Parker, Tenes Parker. Vol. VII, page 263. A copy of Captain Richard Pierce's list from the General Muster on October 7, 1766, gives the names, Gabriel Parker, Martha Parker.

There can be little doubt of Gabriel Parker's being the son of the John Parker, first mentioned. It is thought he lived near the line of Duplin and Lenoir. He was a slaveholder and was considered very prosperous. He made silk hats, and even at a recent date, there were some of his hat molds at the home of his granddaughter, Mary Parker Miller. He served in the War of the Revolution. The records, which should give his services have been destroyed. He was wounded in the thigh in an engagement with the British at Burn Coat Bridge, near Sarecta, Duplin County. He was dead in 1790, as his name does not appear on the census of 1790.

The census of 1790, of Dobbs County (now Lenoir) names the following heads of families: John Parker, Sr., John Parker, Jr., Joseph Parker, Lydia Parker, and Sarah Parker. In the family of Sarah there are herself and one slave. In the family of Lydia, there are herself, one other "free white female," and four "free white males of sixteen years and upwards."

Gabriel Parker is known to have had three children: John, Gabriel and a daughter. Gabriel and the daughter died without issue.

Gabriel Parker (son) died intestate in Lee County, Georgia, May 14, 1834. His inventory taken by Owen Jenkins, James Gay, William Tyson and Michael King amounts to \$39,744. His entire estate was heired by his brother John.

John Parker (son of Gabriel Parker) was born in 1767, and died December 22, 1843. He lived on a farm, now owned by Joshua Dawson, about two and a half miles from the Woodington Church. He owned a mill, was very well off and is said to have been a very kind, high-toned man. He married Angelina Loftin, daughter of Elkanah Loftin, Jr., and Ann Lovick. Her pedigree holds three "rights" to membership in the Society of Colonial Dames. She was born in 1769 and died July 1, 1840.

Members of the family say that John Parker and Angelina



Loftin had children named Nancy, Catherine, John and William, but if they did, they were dead in 1840, because John Parker died intestate and his property was divided into six portions, one each to Winnafred, Letitia (wife of John Davis), Julia, Mary, Rachel, and the five children of Zenas.

A member of the family has a legal paper, which was drawn up but never filed, "The Bill of Complaint of Daniel Miller and Winifred, his wife; John Davis and Letitia, his wife; Imla N. Miller and Mary, his wife; against Rachel Cox, Julia Loftin, William A. Cox, executor of Owen B. Cox, deceased; Stephen Gooding and Louisa, his wife; Nathan Parker, Nancy Parker, John Parker, and William L. Parker, the four last named infants, by their guardian, Joseph R. Croom." In this paper John Parker is called Senior, and it is a petition to the court of Lenoir County and states that the surviving administrators, John Davis and Imla Nunn Miller (Owen B. Cox, being deceased) are ready to settle the estate and are put off by part of the heirs.

I. Zenas Parker died in Lee County, Georgia. He married Mary Davis, daughter of Benjamin Davis. She was born in 1800 and died July 6, 1892. Their children were as follows: 1. Mary Louiza Parker, born October 15, 1825; married Stephen Gooding; lived near Woodington. 2. Nathan Zenas Parker, born November 5, 1827. 3. John Gabriel Parker, born February 17, 1830; died in Wayne County, North Carolina. 4. Nancy Ann Elizabeth Parker, born February 21, 1832; died in Onslow County, North Carolina. 5. William Loftin Parker, born January 5, 1834; died in Lee County, Georgia. 6. Zachariah Davis Parker, born March 3, 1836; died in Georgia. 7. William Loftin Parker, born September 15, 1839, now living near Ambrose, Georgia.

II. Winnafred Parker; born January 3, 1795; died September 9, 1851; married March 11, 1813, Daniel Miller; died September 9, 1851, lived in Lenoir County.

III. Rachel Parker; born May 22, 1800; married January 2, 1817, Owen Bryant Cox, born November 2, 1796. They lived near Tuckahoe, Jones County. Their children were as follows: 1. Elany Ann Cox, born November 15, 1817. 2. Nancy Jane Cox, born December 18, 1818. 3. Gabriel P. Cox, born July 2, 1820. 4. John P. Cox, born August 29, 1823. 5. William B. Cox, born January 6, 1826. 6. Delila E. Cox, born December 24, 1827. 7. Mary Susan Cox, born December 8, 1830. 8. Julia Catherine Cox, born November 29, 1835. 9. Edith Caroline Cox, born January 21, 1838.

IV. Mary Parker, born March 26, 1804; married May 6, 1828, Imila Nunn Miller; died April 16, 1891. She was of unusual ability. She lived near Woodington and during the life of her husband on the "Old Place" of the Millers, which was left to her in fee simple, her husband stating in his will that she had done as much to earn his property as he had done. Their children were as follows: 1. Anderson Roseco Miller, born May 8, 1830; married September 19, 1857, Delia Maria Henry, of Waterbury, Vermont; died July 20, 1905, Kinston, North Carolina. He had the degrees of M. D. and D. D. S. He served in the Confederate Army in Nethercutt's Regiment, was in the Eighth Battalion, afterwards the Sixty-sixth Regiment, and later was appointed hospital steward. 2. Nancy Miller, born August 15, 1832; died October 3, 1902, at the home of her niece, Mrs. H. O. Hyatt, Kinston, North Carolina. She was large, strong, active, and ran her farm in Woodington Township until two years before her death. 3. John Parker Miller, born March 30, 1834; married Elizabeth Jones Rouse; lived in Woodington Township. Both of them were murdered by negroes in 1867, during the Reconstruction. He served three, if not four years in Company F, Sixty-sixth Regiment. (Information furnished by John W. Simmons, of the Sixty-sixth.) 4. Francis Xavier Miller, born July 12, 1836; lives Gainesville, Florida; married October, 1864, Martha A. Williams, of

Greene County, North Carolina. He enlisted in the Confederate Army in the spring of 1861, as a private in Company B, Tenth North Carolina Regiment, at New Bern, was ordered to Fort Macon and was in battle there as ordinance sergeant. They were besieged by Burnside in 1862, captured and sent to Wilmington; he was on parole until exchanged and then was in service in Eastern North Carolina until the close of the war; was in the fights at Kinston and Goldsboro. 5. Julia Miller, born March 16, 1839; married October 13, 1869, William M. Dulin; lives at Statesville, N. C. 6. Mary Angelina Miller, born March 22, 1841; married October, 1864, Lovick Prather; lived principally in Arkansas. 7. Frances Elizabeth Miller, born March 17, 1843; married, 1862, Jackson Fordham; lived Woodington Township. 8. Wiley Phillip Miller, born May 1, 1845; married Jennie Prather, of Guilford County; died July 2, 1875; lived in Woodington Township. He served in the Confederate Army and was in Foscine's Brigade at the taking of New Bern.

V. Julia Parker (daughter of John Parker), was born January 18, 1809; married Major Loftin. They lived and are buried at the clump of trees just across the Lenoir County bridge. Their children were as follows: 1. William Waightstill Loftin, born November 10, 1827; married Margaret Wilson. 2. John H. Loftin, born March 3, 1829; married Harriet Loftin, widow of John Nunn. 3. Mary Loftin, born July 7, 1831; married John Whitehead. 4. Winifred Loftin, born April 26, 1834; married Dr. Benjamin F. Cobb. 5. Martha Loftin, born November 29, 1836; married Dr. Lafayette Hussey. 6. Julia Angelina Loftin, born May 15, 1839; married Richard Wooten. 7. Nancy Parker Loftin, born August 10, 1841; married first, Lemuel Kornegay; second, Dr. S. B. Flowers. 8. James Major Loftin, born June 3, 1844; married Sarah Loftin.

## A Correction

Hathaway's Records state that Sarah Whitfield, the daughter of William Whitfield, married Daniel Herring. This is a mistake. There was a Daniel Herring living in Duplin County, but Sarah Whitfield married Stephen Herring, of Duplin County. The family records of Mr. Benjamin Franklin Grady, Clinton, North Carolina, so state her marriage.

The following record appears on the Duplin County Records (in the Sampson County Court House) January 16, 1773: Stephen Herring, of Duplin, to Frederick Bell, of Duplin, £100. Plantation whereon John Bell now lives, south side of Beaver Swamp, joining John Moore, 267 acres. Part of Henry McCulloch's plot. Stephen Herring and Sarah, his wife, the true, sole and lawful owner. Signed Stephen Herring, Sarah Herring. Test: William Dickson, Samuel Wood.

Stephen Herring lived on Goshen Swamp, between Faison and Calypso.

Vol. XVI

OCTOBER, 1916

No. 2

# *The* North Carolina Booklet



## GREAT EVENTS IN NORTH CAROLINA HISTORY



PUBLISHED QUARTERLY  
BY  
THE NORTH CAROLINA SOCIETY  
DAUGHTERS OF THE REVOLUTION  
RALEIGH, N. C.

## CONTENTS

	PAGE.
Major General Stephen D. Ramseur.....	69
By CHIEF JUSTICE CLARK.	
Historic Homes—"The Fountain".....	76
By CAPTAIN EDMUND JONES.	
Martha McFarlane Bell.....	88
By MARY HILLIARD HINTON.	
Genealogical Department.....	97
Biographical Sketches.....	103

SINGLE NUMBERS 35 CENTS

\$1.00 THE YEAR

*Entered at the Postoffice at Raleigh, N. C., July 15, 1905, under the Act of Congress of March 3, 1879*



# The North Carolina Booklet

## Great Events in North Carolina History

VOLUME XVI of THE BOOKLET will be issued quarterly by the North Carolina Society, Daughters of the Revolution, beginning July, 1916. THE BOOKLET will be published in July, October, January, and April. Price \$1.00 per year, 35 cents for single copy.

EDITOR:

MISS MARY HILLIARD HINTON.

BIOGRAPHICAL EDITOR:

MRS. E. E. MOFFITT.

### VOLUME XVI.

Isaac Shelby: Revolutionary Patriot and Border Hero—Dr. Archibald Henderson.

An Educational Practice in Colonial North Carolina—Edgar W. Knight.

George Selwyn—Miss Violet G. Alexander.

Martha McFarlane Bell, a Revolutionary Heroine—Miss Mary Hilliard Hinton.

North Carolinians in the President's Cabinet, Part III: William A. Graham—Chief Justice Walter Clark.

Historic Homes, Part VII: The Fountain, the Home of Colonel Davenport—Colonel Edmund Jones.

North Carolinians in the President's Cabinet, Part IV: James Cochran Dobbin—Dr. Henry Elliot Shepherd.

A History of Rowan County—Dr. Archibald Henderson.

Edgecombe County History and some of her Distinguished Sons—Mrs. John A. Weddell.

Historical Book Reviews will be contributed by Mrs. Nina Holland Covington. These will be reviews of the latest historical works written by North Carolinians.

The Genealogical Department will be continued, with a page devoted to Genealogical Queries and Answers as an aid to genealogical research in the State.

The North Carolina Society Colonial Dames of America will furnish copies of unpublished records for publication in THE BOOKLET.

Biographical Sketches will be continued under Mrs. E. E. Moffitt.

Old letters, heretofore unpublished, bearing on the Social Life of the different periods of North Carolina History, will appear hereafter in THE BOOKLET.

This list of subjects may be changed, as circumstances sometimes prevent the writers from keeping their engagements.

The histories of the separate counties will in the future be a special feature of THE BOOKLET. When necessary, an entire issue will be devoted to a paper on one county.

Parties who wish to renew their subscriptions to THE BOOKLET for Vol. XVI are requested to give notice at once.

Many numbers of Volumes I to XV for sale.

For particulars address

MISS MARY HILLIARD HINTON,

Editor North Carolina Booklet,

"Midway Plantation," Raleigh, N. C.



*The*  
**NORTH CAROLINA BOOKLET**

---

*"Carolina! Carolina! Heaven's blessings attend her!  
While we live we will cherish, protect and defend her"*

---

Published by  
**THE NORTH CAROLINA SOCIETY**  
**DAUGHTERS OF THE REVOLUTION**

---

The object of THE BOOKLET is to aid in developing and preserving North Carolina History. The proceeds arising from its publication will be devoted to patriotic purposes.

EDITOR.

---

BALEIGH  
COMMERCIAL PRINTING COMPANY  
PRINTERS AND BINDERS

## ADVISORY BOARD OF THE NORTH CAROLINA BOOKLET

MRS. HUBERT HAYWOOD.  
MRS. E. E. MOFFITT.  
MR. R. D. W. CONNOR.  
DR. D. H. HILL.  
DR. WILLIAM K. BOYD.  
CAPT. S. A. ASHE.  
MISS ADELAIDE L. FRIES.  
MISS MARTHA HELEN HAYWOOD.

DR. RICHARD DILLARD.  
DR. KEMP P. BATTLE.  
MR. JAMES SPRUNT.  
MR. MARSHALL DELANCEY HAYWOOD  
CHIEF JUSTICE WALTER CLARK.  
MAJOR W. A. GRAHAM.  
DR. CHARLES LEE SMITH.

EDITOR :

MISS MARY HILLIARD HINTON.

BIOGRAPHICAL EDITOR :

MRS. E. E. MOFFITT.

## OFFICERS OF THE NORTH CAROLINA SOCIETY DAUGHTERS OF THE REVOLUTION 1914-1916

REGENT :

MISS MARY HILLIARD HINTON.

VICE-REGENT :

MRS. MARSHALL WILLIAMS.

HONORARY REGENTS :

MRS. E. E. MOFFITT.

MRS. T. K. BRUNER.

RECORDING SECRETARY :

MRS. L. E. COVINGTON.

CORRESPONDING SECRETARY :

MRS. PAUL H. LEE.

TREASURER :

MRS. CHAS. LEE SMITH.

REGISTRAR :

MISS SARAH W. ASHE.

CUSTODIAN OF RELICS :

MRS. JOHN E. RAY.

## CHAPTER REGENTS

Bloomsbury Chapter-----Mrs. HUBERT HAYWOOD, Regent.  
Penelope Barker Chapter-----Mrs. PATRICK MATTHEW, Regent.  
Sir Walter Raleigh Chapter-----Mrs. I. M. MEEKINS, Regent.  
General Francis Nash Chapter-----Miss REBECCA CAMERON, Regent.  
Roanoke Chapter-----Mrs. F. M. ALLEN, Regent.  
Mary Slocumb Chapter-----Miss GEORGIE HICKS, Regent.

FOUNDER OF THE NORTH CAROLINA SOCIETY AND REGENT 1896-1902 :

MRS. SPIER WHITAKER.\*

REGENT 1902 :

MRS. D. H. HILL, Sr.†

REGENT 1902-1906 :

MRS. THOMAS K. BRUNER.

REGENT 1906-1910 :

MRS. E. E. MOFFITT.

\*Died November 25, 1911.

†Died December 12, 1904.





MAJOR GENERAL STEPHEN D. RAMSEUR.

# The North Carolina Booklet

---

Vol. XVI

OCTOBER, 1916

No. 2

---

## Major General Stephen Dodson Ramseur.

---

An Address delivered at the Presentation of the Portrait of Major General Stephen D. Ramseur, by CHIEF JUSTICE CLARK,  
7 June, 1916.

---

*Ladies of the Memorial Association, Comrades of the Confederacy, Ladies and Gentlemen:*

On 20 May, 1861, a date chosen because it was the anniversary of our first Declaration of Independence, at Mecklenburg, there assembled in the southern wing of the Capitol a Convention commissioned by the popular will to again declare the sovereignty of the State. In that Assembly were many of the foremost men of the State: Ruffin, Badger, Graham, Bedford Brown, Armfield, Arrington, Ashe, Barnes, Biggs, Burton Craige, R. P. Dick, John A. Gilmer, Bryan Grimes, T. L. Hargrove, W. W. Holden, John Manning, Anderson Mitchell, Judge Osborne, Kenneth Raynor, David S. Reid, A. W. Venable, E. J. Warren, Warren Winslow, N. W. Woodfin, Weldon N. Edwards, and many others. The sole survivor of the 120 men that day assembled on that high errand is the distinguished and venerable ex-President of our State University, Kemp P. Battle.

There was small delay in organizing, for the war was already in motion, and after brief discussion the ordinance was quickly and unanimously passed, which repealed that by which we had entered the Union at Fayetteville in 1789, and North Carolina was again a sovereign and independent nation. Indeed on that day we were under three different governments. Until noon we were a State in the Union of the United States, for a few hours we were a sovereign and independent people, and before night the Convention had passed the ordinance which made North Carolina one of the Confederate States.

As soon as the ordinance was passed Major Graham Daves, the private secretary of Governor Ellis, threw open a window on the west side of the House of Representatives and announced to the young captain of artillery who stood waiting on the lawn below with his battery of six guns and his men at their post, that this State had ceased to be one of the United States. Immediately a salvo of 100 guns announced to the world that North Carolina was a sovereign and independent State.

The young captain of artillery, then not quite 24 years of age, a graduate of West Point in the previous year, who had resigned his commission in the United States Army to offer his sword to the South, was Stephen D. Ramseur, of Lincoln County. Somewhat small in stature, but brave, handsome, quick in his movements, ambitious, and accomplished, he was the beau ideal of a soldier. He was destined in the next three years to rise from Lieutenant to Major General, and to die on the field of battle at the head of his division. The company of artillery which he commanded became a part of the history of the immortal army of Northern Virginia as Manly's Battery. Its officers, Basil Manly, Saunders, Guion, and Bridgers, knowing the need of an army officer to train the battery, asked Governor Ellis for the best soldier to command them. The Governor promptly replied, "I know the man," and designated this young officer, who was then at Montgomery, Ala., where he had gone to tender his services to the President of the Confederacy. Under his instruction the battery soon attained supreme excellence, and held to the end a reputation surpassed by none.

In August Captain Ramseur was ordered with his battery to Smithfield, Virginia, and in the spring of 1862 it passed over to the Peninsula, where McClellan was landing his army, on York River, and this battery opened the battle at Williamsburg. Captain Ramseur on that day was promoted to Major, and placed in command of the artillery of our right wing, Basil C. Manly becoming Captain. Major Ramseur



was soon tendered and declined the Lieutenant-Colonelcy of the Third North Carolina Regiment. Soon after he accepted the Colonelcy of the Fifty-Ninth North Carolina Regiment in Ransom's Brigade. In command of that regiment he shared in the seven days fights around Richmond, and was very severely wounded at the unfortunate battle of Malvern Hill on 1 July, 1862.

After the death of the gallant George B. Anderson, who died of wounds received at Sharpsburg, Ramseur, at the age of 25, was placed in command 1 November, 1862, of that historic brigade, which was composed of the 2 N. C., 4 N. C., 14 N. C., and 30 N. C. regiments—a brigade that furnished two Major Generals to the Confederacy, Ramseur and Bryan Grimes, besides Brigadier Generals W. R. Cox, from the 2 N. C. regiment, George B. Anderson and Bryan Grimes from the 4 N. C., and Junius Daniel, from the 14 N. C. Among its many other officers of note was Col. C. C. Tew, of the 2 N. C., who was killed at Sharpsburg, and Lieut-Col. W. P. Bynum, of the same regiment, afterward Justice of the Supreme Court. W. T. Faircloth, later Chief Justice, was Quartermaster in that regiment. In the 14 N. C. regiment Ridsen Tyler Bennett, of blessed memory, succeeded Junius Daniel as Colonel, and the 30 N. C. was commanded by that brave officer, Frank M. Parker.

To recount the battles in which Ramseur shared would be to relate the history of the Army of Northern Virginia. At Chancellorsville on 3 May, 1863, Ramseur, at the head of his brigade, so greatly distinguished himself that General Lee wrote a letter to Governor Vance, saying: "General Ramseur was among those whose conduct was especially commended to my notice by Lieutenant-General Jackson in the message sent to me after he was wounded," adding, "I consider the brigade and regimental commanders of this brigade as among the best of their respective grades in the army." It was in this battle on 3 May, 1863, that Stonewall Jackson was wounded. He died a week later on 10 May, which day North

Carolina still keeps in remembrance as its memorial day for the Confederacy.

Ramseur's brigade belonged to Rodes' Division, Jackson's Corps in that great battle. It was in the famous Gettysburg campaign, and after the three days fight there, when Brigadier-General Iverson, of Georgia, was removed from the command of his brigade, General Ramseur was given the unusual honor of being placed in command of both brigades. In the fall of that year, after the return from Pennsylvania, while our troops were in winter quarters near Orange Courthouse, he was given a furlough, and was married to Miss Ellen E. Richmond, of Caswell County.

In May, 1864, when Grant, with over 120,000 men crossed the Rapidan, Ramseur and his brigade were in almost daily battle with the enemy down to the James River. On 11 May, at Spottsylvania Courthouse, Ramseur and his men went over our breastworks and drove the enemy from our front in a hand to hand engagement. On the next day the situation of our line at the "Salient" having been made known to the enemy during the night by a deserter, Grant threw an irresistible force in overwhelming numbers on that exposed position, capturing Ed. Johnson's Division. Ramseur, Rodes, and the gallant men of those commands, charged the enemy and drove two successive lines of battle out of their works in a hand to hand encounter. In an address before the Army of Northern Virginia, Colonel Venable, of Lee's staff, says: "The restoration of the battle on the 12th, rendering utterly futile the success thus achieved by Hancock's corps at daybreak, was a wonderful feat of arms, in which all the troops engaged deserve the greatest credit for endurance, constancy, and unflinching courage. But without unjust discrimination we may say that Gordon, Rodes and Ramseur were the heroes of this bloody day. . . . Rodes and Ramseur were destined, alas, in a few short months to lay down their noble lives in the Valley of Virginia. There was no victor's chaplet more highly prized by the Roman soldier

than that woven of the grass of early spring. Then let the earliest flowers of May be always intertwined in the garlands which the pious hands of our fair women shall lay on the tombs of Rodes and Ramseur, and of the gallant dead of the battle of twenty hours at Spottsylvania."

Old soldiers of the army of Northern Virginia will tell you that during the whole war there was no contest bloodier, or in which more gallantry was displayed, than on the 12th of May at Spottsylvania Courthouse. After the war I saw in the porch of the war department at Washington City the trunk of a tree 12 inches in diameter that had been cut entirely through by minie balls from both sides. After the battle General Lee and Lieut.-Gen. Ewell, the corps commander, both thanked Ramseur in person and expressed their high appreciation of the conspicuous services and heroic daring of his brigade. In further recognition, on 27 May, then not quite 27 years of age, he was made a Major General, and assigned to the command of Early's Division. Truly, as Napoleon said of himself, "Men age quickly on the battle-field."

After the battle of Second Cold Harbor on 3 June, so fatal to the Federal Army, Ramseur's division, together with Rodes' and Gordon's, were placed under the command of Early, and sent to the Valley of Virginia. They defeated Hunter's Army, crossed the Potomac, and on 11 July, 1864, were in sight of the Capitol at Washington, which they were preparing to take at daylight next morning, when the 6th and 19th corps of the Federal Army, which had been sent by Grant, arrived just in time to prevent the capture of the city. Sullenly and slowly retiring across the Potomac, our army was forced back up the valley, and at Winchester on 19 September General Rodes, commanding one division, was killed. Just a month later, on 19 October, at Cedar Creek, we achieved a splendid success, the Federal Army had fled in a panic when Sheridan arrived on the field, and with reinforcements restored the battle. General Ramseur, in holding his line, had

two horses killed under him, and was twice wounded, on the latter occasion fatally, and fell into the enemy's hands.

Many of the Federal Generals were his former friends at West Point and in the old army, and the best attention was given him. He was taken to General Sheridan's headquarters where he had the service of both his own and the Federal surgeons, but in vain, and on the next day his bright and gallant spirit passed into the great beyond.

General Sheridan had his body embalmed and sent it under a flag of truce with an escort of honor to our lines, where it was received by Ramseur's boyhood friend from his own county of Lincoln, General Robert F. Hoke.

General Early in his report of the battle says, "General Ramseur met the death of a hero, and with his fall the last hope of saving the day was lost. He was a soldier of whom his State has reason to be proud. He was brave, chivalrous and capable."

The division which he was first assigned to command consisted of Pegram's Virginia brigade (the 13, 31, 49, 52 and 58 Virginia regiments); R. D. Johnston's N. C. brigade consisting of the 5, 12, 20 and 23 N. C. regiments, and Godwin's N. C. brigade (the 6, 21, 54 and 57 N. C. regiments and 1 N. C. battalion). On the death of General Rodes he was transferred and placed in command of that division which consisted of Battle's Alabama brigade, Cook's Georgia brigade, Grimes' N. C. brigade (the 32, 43, 45, and 53 N. C. regiments and 2 N. C. battalion) and Cox's N. C. brigade (Ramseur's old brigade), composed of the 1, 2, 3, 4, 14 and 30 N. C. regiments, the remnants of 1 and 3 N. C. regiments having been added to this brigade after the capture of the bulk of these regiments at the Salient.

Thus three short years sum up the career of this splendid young soldier who in four years from his graduation as a cadet at West Point had become a Major General, whose fame was known to both armies. He fell in battle at the head of his division, and was spared the anguish, the sorrow and humilia-

tion of the failing days of the Confederacy and Reconstruction—fortunate in the hour and manner of his death—as in his life.

General Ramseur was a member of an old and respected family in the county of Lincoln, which, though small in area, has furnished many splendid men to the State in civil life, and among its gallant soldiers there were three Generals: Major General Stephen D. Ramseur, Major General Robert F. Hoke, and Brigadier General Robert D. Johnston. Hoke and Ramseur were about the same age, and Johnston still younger. No county in the State surpassed the record made by its soldiers of every rank from private to General.

Thus briefly has been summed up the story of this gallant young soldier, hardly more than a boy when he died. His fame belongs not alone to North Carolina, but to the whole country.

North Carolina has cause to be proud of the record of her soldiers in that great war. No other State, North or South, furnished as many men in proportion to its population, and certainly none were better or braver soldiers.

The day before he received his fatal wound, General Ramseur received news of the birth of his daughter, his only child, and he went into battle wearing a flower in her honor. Soldiers, comrades, we have the honor to have her with us today—Miss Mary Dodson Ramseur. She is the donor of this portrait of her gallant and distinguished father which, honored by her request, I now present to the State to be hung on these walls in perpetual memorial that the generations to come may remember what manner of man he was who knew how to die for his country and his duty.

As was said of the greatest soldier of the centuries:

"The lightnings may flash and the loud cannon rattle.  
He heeds not, he hears not, he's free from all pain;  
He sleeps his last sleep, he has fought his last battle,  
No sound can awake him to glory again."



## Historic Homes, Part VII:

### "THE FOUNTAIN" AND ITS BUILDER.

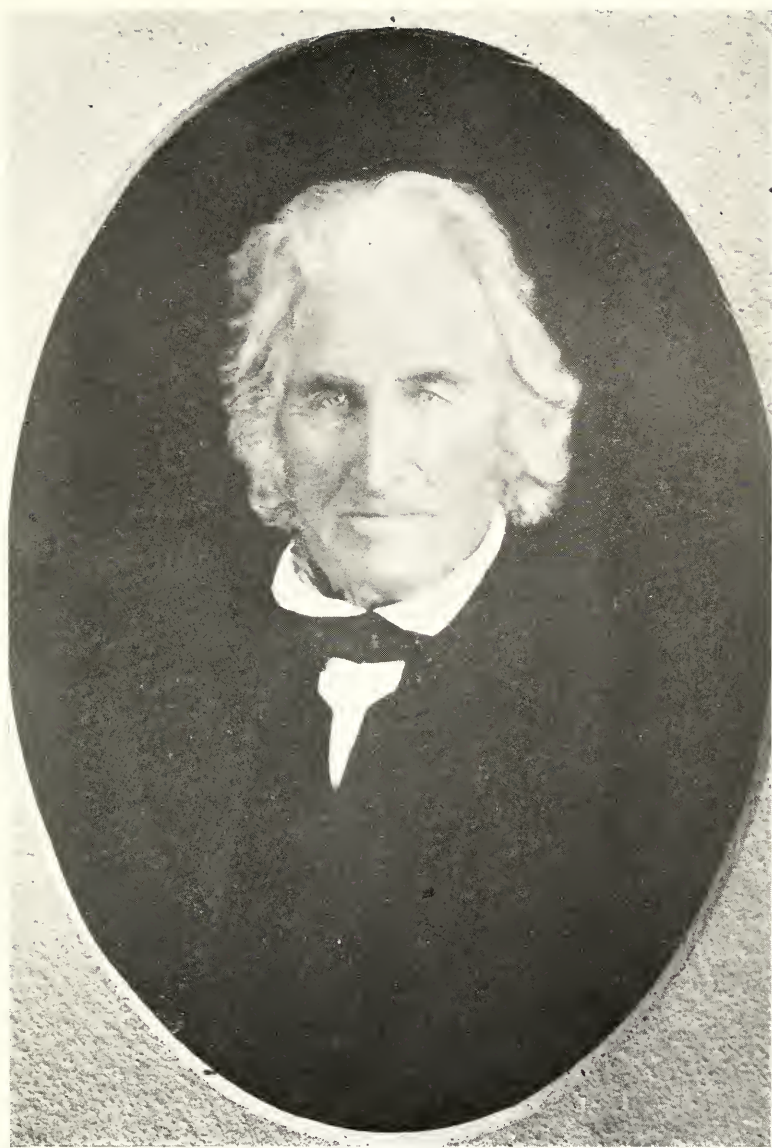
By CAPTAIN EDMUND JONES.

What manner of men they were, what their conceptions of public and social duty, and what advance, if any, our civilization has made over that represented by them, is, or should be the object of the review of the lives, character and times of the men of the past, prominent as the builders of our State and master workmen upon its foundations. Objects seen through a mist always appear larger than the reality; but the outlines are blurred and indistinct. So viewed through the curtain of intervening years, our ancestors seem, to our partial eyes, to loom up to almost gigantic proportions. Filial respect, inherited veneration, and pride of ancestry, have buried with their bodies every fault and weakness and exaggerated each virtue, until it is difficult to separate the shadow from the substance and arrive at the true dimensions of those long since gone, but whom we think "have deserved well of the Republic."

THE NORTH CAROLINA BOOKLET, that "Old Mortality" among all the State publications, whose gentle mission it is to keep clear and distinct the names on the moss-covered tombs of those deemed worthy to be remembered by posterity, has from time to time given to the public a series of charming sketches of men, women and places, venerable in our annals, but whose history is all too unknown in this hurry-day age. The editor of the BOOKLET has deemed the subject of this sketch to be worthy of remembrance, and has asked the writer to prepare a paper on Colonel William Davenport, of "The Fountain," in the "Happy Valley" of the Yadkin.

William Davenport was born in Culpepper County, Virginia, October 12, 1769, and was one of the several children of Martin Davenport and his wife, née Baker. The family came early to America from the South of Wales, probably





COLONEL WILLIAM DAVENPORT.



during the emigration from England of the Royalists after the establishment of the "Commonwealth" under Oliver Cromwell. The family was an old and respected one, but without any claim to noble or even knightly lineage. A few years before the breaking out of the Revolutionary War, Martin Davenport removed from Virginia with his family to Burke County, North Carolina, and made his home on John's River, now in the county of Caldwell. Here in this borderland between civilization on the East and the great mountains full of unfriendly Cherokees on the West, this pioneer family were living in abundance and in such peace as their surroundings permitted, when the news of the battle of Lexington aroused the colonists to a realization of the fact that they were looking into the face of war. He whose trusty rifle had ever protected wife, child, and home from prowling enemy and savage beast, was equally ready to repel alien foe, and among the very first, Martin Davenport aligned himself with the Whigs and became one of the bravest, boldest and most efficient of that wild band that rode with Old Ben Cleveland.

When the boy William became of school-age, the whole continent was in the throes of the Revolution. On this remote frontier there were no school book and no schools. Save what he may have learned from the instruction of a wise and prudent mother, it is to be doubted if he ever had any schooling until after the close of the war; but from what appears subsequently, it is certain that even at that tender age, the intricacies of the rifle and the use of the hunting knife were no mysteries to him. At the age of twelve he killed on Toe River, in what is now Avery County, the last elk ever seen wild in North Carolina. He afterwards gave the splendid horns to General William Lenoir, who donated them to the University of North Carolina, where the writer saw them in the attic of the old South building when he was a student at Chapel Hill immediately after the close of the Civil War.

As proof of the aphorism that "the child is father to the man," the following incident is well vouched for, and I give

it as related in a sketch of Colonel Davenport, written by the late Nelson A. Powell, of Lenoir, N. C.: "When William was about ten years of age, a noted Tory officer named McFall, rode up with a squad to Martin Davenport's home, he being absent on military duty. The officer demanded dinner and ordered William to feed their horses. William answered, 'If you want them fed, do it yourself, for I shan't.' The order was repeated, accompanied by severe threats, but he persistently refused, sensible of the degradation involved in it. Upon his repeated refusal the Tory whipped him cruelly, ordering him to feed the horses. The Tories entered the house to satisfy their own appetites; but William fed no horses: instead thereof, he secured a gun and followed the road they were to take, for some three-fourths of a mile from the residence, concealed himself behind some bushes on a bank overhanging the road, cocked the gun and waited for the officer and squad to approach his ambush, when he intended to shoot him. Providentially for William, and perhaps for the Tory, before the squad approached him, they turned from the main road and took a near cut by a bridle path. The boy waited until the sun began to set before he returned to eat his own dinner, and to see what had become of the unwelcome guests." McFall nevertheless did not escape vengeance, for later he was among those captured at King's Mountain, and was among the thirty-two upon whom the death sentence was imposed, seven of whom only were actually executed. McFall was among those whose sentence was commuted until Colonel Ben Cleveland, who was one of the court-martial, hearing McFall's name called, and remembering the incident above mentioned, spoke out, "That man McFall is not fit to live; he went to the house of one of my best soldiers, Martin Davenport, while he was absent, insulted Mrs. Davenport and whipped his child. Hang him!" The sentence was carried out thereupon and forthwith.

One can hardly realize in our time the obstacles in the way of acquiring even a rudimentary education in a remote section

of the country during the period immediately following the close of the Revolution. But, that Colonel Davenport did acquire a very solid and substantial knowledge of our language, as well as excellent proficiency in mathematics, is evidenced from the fact that he was early recognized as one of the most accurate and reliable surveyors in all western Carolina. It is to be deplored that the identity of his teacher cannot now be established. Whosoever he was, he was an instructor of rare proficiency. School books were scarce and costly. The writer has several of William Davenport's school books. Among them a curious old geography with many quaint maps, and an arithmetic written out in full from cover to cover with pen and ink, with every letter and figure beautifully made, and the different headings flourished out in several colored inks, doubtless the product of the trees, shrubs and berries that were natives of the forests that surrounded his home. On the inside of the card-board cover in Colonel Davenport's handwriting, is the statement that "W. Davenport made this book at school in the year 1787." The book is about the size of a merchant's day-book, and, in common with several others on different subjects, is covered with buckskin from deer, doubtless the victims of his own rifle, and tanned with that beauty of finish and certainty of durability, the method of which was so well known to the Indians and early hunters, but which in our day seems to be among the lost arts.

In the year 1800 Colonel Davenport represented Burke County in the lower House of the General Assembly, and in 1802 was the State Senator from that district. His sterling worth and fine character even at the age of thirty-one had impressed itself upon his fellow citizens. Among the papers of Waightstill Avery, the signer of the Mecklenburg Declaration, was found addressed to the voters, a letter in which "young Billy Davenport" is recommended as a fit and proper person to represent the county in the General Assembly. Then, as now, politics had its rough side, for the Colonel



became involved in a controversy with General Balus Edney. The matter led to a challenge from General Edney to Colonel Davenport. The challenge was accepted, and arrangements made by their seconds to meet at six o'clock the next morning at a designated spot near Morganton and settle the difficulty with rifles. Colonel Davenport was promptly on hand at the time and place with his deadly rifle, but his antagonist never showed up. Information of the meeting had somehow gotten to the officers of the law, and General Edney had been placed under arrest, and the duel prevented.

About this time he married Mary Gordon, widow of Major Charles Gordon, and eldest daughter of General William Lenoir. Major Gordon was one of the distinguished Wilkes County family of that name, and was the uncle of General John B. Gordon, of Georgia, and also General James B. Gordon, commander of the famous North Carolina cavalry brigade of Lee's Army. After his marriage, he moved his residence to the "Happy Valley" in order that his wife might remain near her family and kindred. In 1807 he completed "The Fountain," named from a beautiful spring near by, the fine old home where he spent the remainder of his days, and which is still the seat of a gracious hospitality at the hands of his great grandchildren. The sills of the house are of massive black walnut logs, hewed to a square. The pillars of the portico were of the same precious wood, and were *painted white* to correspond with the rest of the house and as a matter of adornment. Black walnut was of no particular value then, while white paint was considered the limit of taste and elegance. "The Fountain" was henceforth one of those fine old country homes of the "Happy Valley," the occupants of which were all related, and where for a hundred years a gracious hospitality was, and still is, dispensed.

The Fountain, as originally constructed, was along building lines generally in vogue at that day and time for residences on Southern plantations. Two stories in height, with a portico in front the entire length of the house, the corresponding



side in the rear one-story shed rooms built to and constituting a part of the main building. At each end were great, broad, massive chimneys, and on the inside fire-places in each room corresponding in size to the chimneys. There was not a passage in the house; their use and convenience seem not to have been known or were unappreciated. The staircase ran up from the inside of the rooms, all of which, on the same floor, were connected by doors in the partition walls. Immediately under the roof was the great garret; that awful and mysterious region where ghosts walked and where dire and fearful engines of torment were stored for the purpose of administering punishment to delinquent children or those too daring or inquisitive in their investigations. The "big house" occupied one side of a quadrilateral. On another was the dairy, the loom-room and the kitchen; opposite on the other side was the smoke-house, granary and carriage house. On the far side and in the rear across the road were the negro quarters in easy call of the master's voice, the whole constituting the typical planter's seat, as many of the passing generation remember them. The outlook from the front commanded mountain and valley, and took in the entire scope of the broad acres that constituted the plantation. In the interior the inevitable grandfather clock, made in Morganton early in the nineteenth century by one of those wonderfully skillful wandering clockmakers, whose tribe machinery has caused to become extinct, still sits in the place where for so many years it ticked off the days, hours, minutes and seconds.

At the close of the Civil War Captain William Davenport Jones, a grandson, returned from the battlefields and made "The Fountain" his home. Here he lived until his own death four years ago. Here sons and daughters were born unto him; here some have "gone to the bridal, some to the grave"; here some of them still reside, and here is the spot that they all, wherever located, call "home."

About the year 1879, Captain Jones prevailed upon that accomplished Englishman, General Collett Leventhorpe, and

his wife, to come to "The Fountain" and make it his home. He and General Leventhorpe had married sisters, daughters of General Edmund Bryan, of Rutherford. They had served through the war together, and were much attached to each other, brothers in affection as well as brothers-in-law. With him General Leventhorpe brought many rare, curious and beautiful works of art; bronzes, vases, etchings and paintings, on canvas, on wood and on metal, collected in all sorts of places and in many climes, representing the Dutch, Flemish and Italian schools. None of them were less than a hundred years old, and many much older. Among them, peerless in its beauty, is a painting of the Madonna and Child that legend ascribes, and many good judges believe, is one of the earlier works of the great Raphael. Be that as it may, it is wonderfully beautiful, and it shows for itself that it is very ancient. There are also in the collection many etchings of Rembrandt, and two paintings of Ostard, an exquisite copy of the Temperantia vase, and what is believed to be a crucifix in solid silver by Benvenuto Cellini. At his death General Leventhorpe left his rare collection to his wife, and when she died, having no children of her own, she divided by will these art treasures among her nephews and nieces, children of Captain Jones. The Raphael (?), together with many of the rarest and most valuable articles, is still to be seen at "The Fountain."

In 1813 Colonel Davenport was sent to represent the county of Wilkes in the General Assembly, but thereafter could not be induced to accept another election. He was, however, for a number of years register of the county, with his accomplished wife as his chief amanuensis. The books of that office made during the period of his incumbency, are well worth examining. The writer has never seen any records that in beauty and excellence were their equal. Whole volumes appear in the copper-plate hand of Mrs. Davenport without a scratch, blot or erasure.



"THE FOUNTAIN," THE HOME OF COLONEL DAVENPORT.



In 1821 he was appointed by the Commissioners on the part of North Carolina, as surveyor for the State, to join with the representatives of the State of Tennessee in surveying out and establishing the dividing line between the two States from the point where another set of Commissioners left off in 1779, to the Georgia line, a stretch of near one hundred and twenty miles. The whole distance was through a wild, rough, densely wooded and almost uninhabited mountain country. This trying and difficult service was performed with the same particularity and fidelity that marked everything that fell in the line of his duty. Accurate reports, field notes and maps were made and deposited in the archives of the State, where, unfortunately they were lost or destroyed in the burning of the old Capitol. Nearly a hundred years afterward a great lawsuit sprung up between the claimants of many thousand acres of very valuable timber lands situated along the line that had been run. The plaintiffs claimed under grants from the State of North Carolina, the defendants by virtue of grants from the State of Tennessee. The Tennessee records were too incomplete to decide the location of the line, while those of North Carolina had been destroyed. The marks made on the trees at the time the survey was made had nearly "grown out," and the living witnesses had all passed away. In this dilemma the writer was applied to, to make a search among Colonel Davenport's old papers, to which he had ready access, and see if anything could be unearthed that might throw light upon the troubled question. A mass of ancient papers was gone through, but without result. At last a great, massive sideboard that had always in Colonel Davenport's day sat against the wall in the parlor, was entered and searched. From its labyrinth of pigeon holes, concealed receptacles and secret drawers was at last abstracted a note book, and upon examination it was found to be the long lost field notes of Colonel Davenport, giving the course and distance of every part of the line. This was at once placed in the hands of Attorney General T. W. Bickett,



and by him laid before the Supreme Court of the United States, where the case was then pending on appeal. These notes decided the controversy, and North Carolina won out, thanks to the forethought and careful business methods of Colonel Davenport.

In personal appearance he was a most striking figure. Five feet and ten inches in height, with broad, massive shoulders and deep chest, he tapered from shoulder to the small foot encased in a number six shoe. The body was surmounted with a noble head covered by a snow-white, leonine mane, which curled down and rested on his shoulders. The face, of which a great Roman nose was the chief feature, was lit up by a pair of clean, clear, straight looking eyes, blue in color and set beneath an overhanging brow; a firm, square jaw and straight, well set lips, the whole constituting a face and figure once seen was not easily forgotten. Great age was never able to bow his figure with the weight of years, and at near ninety he was as straight as a lance. He was remarkably neat in dress, and while his apparel was of good and simple material, it was the product of the best tailors of his day. He sometimes told with great relish an anecdote at his own expense as illustrative of the notable prominence of his chief facial feature. While dining on one occasion at the hospitable residence of Hon. John Hinton, one of his fellow members of the Legislature from Wake County, Mrs. Hinton, impressed and in a manner fascinated by the great eagle-beak, intended to ask him "to make a long arm" and help himself to some dish on the table, but unconsciously speaking what was uppermost in her mind, asked him "to make long nose" and help himself to the salad, to the utter confusion of the gracious lady, and the intense amusement of the company, Colonel Davenport included.

Being of a quick and somewhat irascible temper, he kept a constant guard over it, and regulated his life in society, in business, in methods and in words, by rules of his own making, in the observance of which he was firm and even obsti-



nate. He was the owner of a great and fertile plantation, and "The Fountain" was always the home of abundance. No attention was paid by him to prevailing market prices for products of the farm. Intrinsic value alone was his guide. A bushel of corn was the synonym for fifty cents, and a bushel of wheat for a dollar. If the market price for either was above these figures he still sold for the same; if below, he let it remain in his crib, unless he gave it away. This writer has seen one of his cribs containing a thousand bushels of two year old corn. "Davenport measure" was proverbial in his day, and the meaning is even now well understood by the older men of his community. A half bushel meant a measure upon which the contents must be piled as long as it could be heaped on, the result of which was that it took five pecks to make a Davenport bushel.

As illustrative of the firmness with which he maintained his "rules," I was told more than twenty-five years ago, by one of his neighbors, himself then over ninety years old, the following instance, which I give in his own language: "One year there was almost an entire failure of the wheat crop, and the quality was so poor that I did not think it was worth while to save any of it for seed. Some one told me that Colonel Davenport has raised some good wheat of a new kind. I went down to see him and get eight bushels to sow. When I mentioned my business to him he said, 'Yes, Johnnie, I have some wheat that will do very well for seed.' Upon being asked the price, he replied that he always had one price for grain, 50 cents for corn and a dollar for wheat. I thereupon told him that I would take eight bushels, but that I did not have the money to pay for it right then. To this he replied, 'That's all right,' but if not paid for in cash the price would be a dollar and five cents. I argued the matter with him, but he was firm, saying that was his rule, and he couldn't break his rule for anybody. After a while I got a little piqued, and told him I wouldn't take it. This appeared to disturb him powerful, and he run his hands down in his breeches pockets

and dropped his head and seemed to study a long time. After a while he raised his head and says, 'Johnnie, I'll tell you how we can fix this. I haven't got any rule against lending a friend money, and I'll lend you the money to pay for the wheat, and you can pay it back whenever you get ready.' I told him that if that suited him better it was all right with me. He then ran his hand down into his pocket and pulled out eight dollars and handed them to me, and I handed them back to him and took the wheat."

The writer remembers once being at "The Fountain" when two great, four-horse wagons drove up and wanted 100 bushels of corn. The preceding year, owing to prolonged drought, had cut the crop to a point where, outside of the fertile bottom lands of the Yadkin, there was great scarcity in the surrounding counties, and the price was unusually high. On the occasion mentioned, the following conversation took place: "Good morning! Is this Colonel Davenport?" "Yes." "Colonel, we understand you have some corn to sell?" "Yes, I have some that I could spare." "Well, we want to buy a hundred bushels, and we have the money to pay for it." "Where are you from?" asked the Colonel. They told him from Gaston. "You say you have the money to pay for it?" They told him they had. "Well," said the Colonel, "If you have the money to pay for it you can drive on down the river, where there is plenty of corn for sale. I am going to keep mine, for my poor neighbors that can't pay for it." This ended the negotiation.

Soon after the completion of his residence, he erected in a beautiful grove on his plantation, and in a central and convenient location, a large and roomy church with an annex for negroes, and here during his life, whenever there was service, he and his relatives and neighbors, with their many slaves, might be found assembled for worship. He always retained the title to the property, for he would never permit it to be sectarianized, though he himself was a devoted Methodist. He was one of the foremost subscribers to all the churches

erected in Lenoir during his lifetime, although he lived eight miles away in the country. He was one of the founders and the chief contributor to Davenport Female College, which was named in his honor, and in which he maintained a warm interest as long as he lived. He abhorred thriftlessness and waste, but no worthy poor or unfortunate man ever went away from his presence empty-handed.

For sixty-five years he was a justice of the peace, and settled the controversies and contentions of his neighbors according to that patriarchal code, which, at that time, was the “common law of the land.”

He loved the open-air life, and even after he had passed his fourscore years, could be seen every forenoon, when weather permitted, riding horseback over his broad acres, while the summer afternoons were passed on the portico dozing in his arm-chair, occasionally rousing to throw his cane at some impudent crowing rooster that was disturbing his repose.

So peacefully did his life pass away that he refused to take to his bed, and he died with loving eyes fixed upon the mountains that had been to him both companions and shelter through all the long years of his life.

## Martha McFarlane Bell.

---

By MARY HILLIARD HINTON.

---

Some claim that North Carolina has had few women of the heroic type that by their phenomenal gifts have performed deeds that have attracted and held the attention of the world to such an extent as to win permanent places in her archives. This idea prevails through sheer ignorance. No State can show a longer list of Revolutionary heroines and as loyal devotion to the patriot cause as the dames and damsels of the Old North State. Caruthers himself says: "It is believed that there were as many females in the Old North State as in any other, who, for their sacrifices, their sufferings, and their patriotic services, deserve an honorable notice in history as in any one of the 'Old Thirteen.'" Think of a slip of a girl saving the Albemarle section from the invader's pillage! Such was the service rendered her country by Betsy Dowdy when she warned General Skinner of the British plans, thereby making possible the victory of the Battle of Great Bridge. The defiance of the brave women of Edenton, spurred on by Penelope Barker, adds another gem to our rosary of patriotic achievements. To commemorate their heroic patriotism, the Daughters of the Revolution placed in the rotunda of the State Capitol the first memorial that has adorned that building. Doctor Dillard has told of them in the first volume of the BOOKLET. Little Virginia Dare's story was the first article contributed to our magazine, and that ideal type of the Old Regime, the late Major Graham Daves, was the author. Doctor Henderson has written for us the life of the brave Elizabeth Maxwell Steele; Mr. W. C. Ervin has recounted the deeds of the beautiful Grace Greenlee; the rides of Mary Slocumb and Rebecca Lanier have been described. Other names that deserve homage are forgotten, and facts concerning their chequered lives have not been

collected. It is the object of the Bloomsbury Chapter to gather the names of North Carolina's notable women, to write sketches of their lives and to store them away among the archives of the State Society.

Of the heroines of the Revolution none were braver than Martha McFarlane Bell, whose existence from the day of open hostilities till peace settled down on the ramparts of Yorktown was harassed by constant dangers. Hers was not the pyrotechnic display of a few hours heroism; it covered the expanse of the years that marked the period known as the American Revolution. The Reverend E. W. Caruthers, D.D., published his book, "The Old North State in 1776," in 1856, and as late in the century as that, he states, the knowledge of her life was each year becoming more unreliable, and that his sketch of Mrs. Bell contains the reminiscences of individuals who had the advantage of knowing her personally, and he can vouch for their authenticity.

In historic Orange County Mrs. Bell was born and reared. Her home was situated in the southern part, or that section which later fell within the boundaries of the present county of Alamance. She sprang from Scotch or Scotch-Irish ancestry, as her maiden name McFarlane indicates. She could at no time of life have been called a beauty, but she possessed some fine features, and was considered "a good looking woman." Though by no means masculine, but ever deporting herself with modesty, she was gifted with a strong mind, an ardent temperament and great firmness. She could love devotedly and hate with equal intensity, which made her a valuable friend, but an undesirable enemy. She possessed a high sense of duty, and won and held the respect of the communities in which she lived. She feared her Maker, and nothing on earth.

Some eight or ten years prior to the Revolution Martha McFarlane married a young widower, Colonel John McGee, with two children and an ample fortune. Their home was on Sandy Creek in the northern portion of Randolph County.



Colonel McGee owned a vast landed estate, a mill, a country store, etc., and carried on a larger business than any other man in Randolph. Dying about the beginning of the Revolution, he left his wife with five little children, three boys and two girls, to struggle with the world. One son became a Presbyterian, the other a Methodist, minister—all were in time church members. Being the richest widow in that locality, it is said many sought her hand in marriage, particularly the frisky young widowers and the less matrimonially inclined bachelors of the prime, who evidently because she turned down their attentions considered her “a little haughty.” Finally William Bell, a widower, won her affections, and on May 6, 1779, they were united in the holy bonds of matrimony.

From the moment the ties were severed with the Mother Country, Mrs. Bell espoused the patriot cause. Many are the incidents related that tested her remarkable fearlessness and presence of mind. Danger, instead of intimidating her, merely inspired to greater exertion of mind and body. She desired above all things to be useful, and being by nature a nurse, she never let an opportunity pass to serve the sick and needy, going when called to any one, even long distances, by sun as well as moon and starlight. These acts of kindness were gratuitous till the ravages of war depleted her one-time plentiful possessions, then a regular charge was made. To take such journeys this brave woman risked in those troublous times and to escape unharmed seems indeed a marvel. The country was but sparsely settled, the roads at times almost impassable, and cutthroats and desperadoes ubiquitous, yet this woman, mounted on a noble steed and armed with dirk and pistols like the knight of old, sallied forth on deeds of mercy. During the war she sometimes encountered insults and attacks at the hands of ruffians, but her wonderful self-possession always rescued her from harm.

On one occasion, about the close of the Revolution, she was traveling an unfrequented road, obeying an appeal for help,



when she espied ahead a perfect desperado and outlaw by the name of Stephen Lewis, generally called Steve Lewis, a member of Fanning's Corps. When he beheld her approaching he dismounted, hitched his horse, set his gun against a tree and then took his stand in the middle of the road. As she approached he seized her horse by the bridle and ordered her to dismount, at which she drew her pistol and threatened to shoot him on the spot should he move a step. Woman's nature is not to take human life, though had Mrs. Bell fired and killed this notorious Tory, it would have been a Cordet-like act. However, she pursued the milder course and was content with taking him prisoner, driving him home before her at the point of the pistol, ready at any moment to fire. Since there was no man there to keep guard over him, he escaped to meet later by his own brother's hand death in his own house.

After the profitless victory at Guilford Courthouse, Cornwallis' Army on its way to Wilmington encamped for about two days at the Bell plantation. The troops arrived about the middle of the afternoon, the main division stacked arms at John Clarke's, the adjoining plantation. While Cornwallis seized her house as headquarters, he knew the character of the landlady, and treated her with marked respect. Cornwallis enquired the whereabouts of William Bell.

She replied: "In Greene's camp."

"Is he an officer or a soldier in the army?"

"He is not; but thought it better to go to his friends than to stay and fall into the hands of his enemies."

"Madam I must make your house my headquarters, and have the use of your mill for a few days to grind for my army while I remain here."

"Sir, you possess the power, and, of course will do as you please without my consent; but, after using my mill, do you intend to burn it before you leave?"

"Madam, why do you ask that question?"

"Sir, answer my question first, then I will answer yours in a short time."

His lordship then assured her that the mill should not be burnt or injured; but that he must use it to prepare provisions for his army, and further added: That by making her house his headquarters he would be a protection to herself, her house, and everything in or about it; "for," said he, "no soldier of mine dare to plunder or commit depredations near my quarters."

To this she replied: "Now, sir, you have done me a favor by giving me a satisfactory answer to my question, and I will answer yours. Had your lordship said that you intended to burn our mill, I had intended to save you the trouble by burning it myself before you derived much benefit from it; but as you assure me that you will be a protection to me, and to the property about the house, I will make no further objections to your using our mill, and making my house your headquarters while you stay, which I think you said would be only for a few days."

This compact was kept literally by both parties.

When Cornwallis entered the house he announced his annihilation of Greene's Army, and that henceforth they could do no more harm. In a few moments, by the commander's action, it was learned that this was mere bravado. The vernal equinox was approaching, which caused the cold, high wind. On that account the back door, that overlooked the Martinsville-Fayetteville road, was kept shut. Cornwallis opened this and stood a few moments gazing up the road, then again took his seat by the fire. Mrs. Bell immediately shut it. The British peer again opened it, and returned to his chair, showing extreme restlessness, being unable to stay in one position five minutes. When Mrs. Bell closed the door the second time, he insisted that the door be left open. When asked the reason, he said General Greene might be coming down the road.

"Why," said she, "I thought you told me a little while ago that you had annihilated his army, and that he could do you no more harm."

To this he answered: "Well, madam, to tell you the truth, I never saw such fighting since God made me, and another such victory would annihilate me."

Mrs. Bell was much vexed to have her house occupied by imperious, profane men, though the commander's presence protected her to a certain extent and she escaped the insult hurled at Mrs. Caldwell's head seven days before. They seized her grain, cattle, provisions and whatsoever they chose, without compensation. At a distance she could hear the soldiers cursing her as a rebel and uttering maledictions. Through all she bore herself with dignity and without fear. One day a man in passing her door hurled at her some insulting language. She expressed a wish that the horse might throw him and break his neck. In several minutes her wish was granted. Dashing headlong down the steep bank of the river the rider was thrown and his head crushed amid the rocks.

Being warned of the approach of the enemy, she employed every means to hide her coin and bacon. The pork she secreted in rocks across the river, the money—divided chiefly in "guineas and half Jos"—she placed under a huge rock, which formed the bottom step at the entrance. This was a favorite depository for the Whigs' cash, and knowing that, the enemy frequently lifted the steps in search of hidden treasure. Knowing she ran the risk of losing the savings of years, she tried one day by going through the camp to divert the attention of the enemy, after lingering there till all became in some way engaged, then she walked boldly to the step, lifted the rock, took up her coin and went about her own affairs. A man named Stephen Harlin had been employed by the Bells in the capacity of miller for several years. He had the reputation of being a rascal and a Tory, as his conduct proved, letting the British have grain and meal out of the mill and

revealing the hiding place of her bacon, all of which they stole. For this theft she never forgave him, declining henceforth to speak to him. On the arrival of the British he threw his cap in the air, shouting, "Hurra for King George!" Harlin was not dismissed until a miller could be hired that gave public satisfaction.

The evening that Cornwallis' forces retreated, Mrs. Bell visited the camp, ostensibly on some errand, but in truth to ascertain the real condition to report to Colonel Lee and Colonel Washington, who, hanging on the rear of the Redcoats, gave considerable trouble. General Greene must know the force of his enemy, who was heavily encumbered with the wounded, who were dying all along the highway. Donning her husband's uniform and arming herself well, she rode forth into the British camp, then at the Walker plantation on Sandy Creek, on the pretext of a claim for depredations committed that were unknown till the soldiers departed, she was keenly alert, and returned bearing information to the Patriots.

There is another exploit that even surpassed in daring the reconnoissance of the British camp. That was the night she rode the entire night in company with a Whig in order to ascertain the movements of the Tories said to have been forming across the river fourteen miles distant from her house. The perils of such a journey were indeed great. At each house she was the "spokesman." She would enquire the road to a certain point, and on to another, etc. She made such enquiries as, "Were there any Royalists embodied in that direction?" "Where was their place of meeting?" "How far was it?" "What was their number?" "What were they going to do?" "Would they molest her?" In this way she learned satisfactorily of the enemies' movements since the information led to Colonel Lee's successful raid the following night.

Mrs. Bell's staunch patriotism invited attacks from the Tories. In such constant danger did they live, her husband dared not lodge there at night. On one visitation they burned the barn and its contents, wounded one of her sons and threat-

ened to shoot another, because they protested against such depredations. Another night they attempted to murder her aged father then on a visit to his daughter's family. When two desperate characters approached him with drawn swords, seeing she must act quickly, Mrs. Bell seized a broad-axe tightly with both hands, raised it above her head, exclaimed with great sternness, "If one of you touches him I'll split you down with this axe. Touch him if you dare!" Her earnestness and defiant attitude overawed them to such an extent they left the house. In the fall of 1781, after a trip North, Mr. Bell attempted to sleep beneath his own roof. The Tories, learning of his presence, called promptly with intentions of hanging him. Finding the house securely closed, they prepared to apply the torch. When they were passing around the house Mr. Bell thrust his head out of the window to see if they had applied the torch, and in case they did, to fire upon them. A Tory very near to the window inflicted such a wound on his head that he was completely overcome. Mrs. Bell summoned her youthful sons—lads in their teens—from their beds upstairs and ordered them to get the old musket, ready to fire from the upper windows, and going to the windows near the kitchen yelled to their servant Peter, "Run as hard as you can to Jo. Clarke's and tell him and the light horse to come as quickly as possible, for the Tories are here." Mr. Clarke had a troop of mounted men at his command, but of their whereabouts at that moment Mrs. Bell was then ignorant. So, apprehensive of shots from above, and of Jo. Clarke's "light horse," the Tories concluded to retreat was the wiser course.

Of Mrs. Bell's trip to Wilmington in company with Mrs. Dugan to visit the latter's son, Colonel Thomas Dugan, long confined on a prison ship, and condemned to be hung, space forbids more than passing mention. With perilous adventures like these Mrs. Bell's remarkable career was filled. She loved peace, and with sincere rejoicing laid aside the pistol and the dirk, and took up again her domestic duties and mis-

sions of mercy that multiplied as practice enhanced her skill. A peaceful reign contains but few events to record, so it is with individuals, therefore of Mrs. Bell's latter days we can learn but little. Just when Mr. Bell died is not known, but Mrs. Bell was many years a widow. Though constantly performing acts of kindness, and leading a most exemplary life, she did not connect herself with the church until 1800. About the eighty-fifth year of her age, on September 9, 1820, her spirit passed peacefully over the Bar. Hers was an unusual character, endowed with many sterling qualities, that, considering her few advantages, enabled her to act nobly her part in times that tried men's souls.



## Genealogical Department.

---

### EDGECOMBE COUNTY RECORDS—ROBBINS.

---

Compiled by SYBIL HYATT, Kinston, N. C.

---

#### GENERATION I—WILLIAM ROBBINS.

Will. April 7, 1779. November Court, 1781. Eldest son: Arthur. Sons: William, Jethro, Thomas, John. Grandson: Jesse Green. Daughters: Luraney Horn (great grandmother of Martha C. Horne, second wife of Jesse Battle Hyatt), Elizabeth, now wife of Thomas Williams; Charity, now wife of David Sears; Milly. Executors: John Williams, John Robbins. Witnesses: Benjamin Weaver, Jacob Robbins, Mary Robbins.

Inventory August 24, 1781: William Robbins, 662 acres, 11 negroes, etc. Executors: John Williams, John Robbins.

William Robbins' wife may have been a Battle. The Hornes were kin to the Battles. The Battles were Baptists.

#### GENERATION II—WILLIAM ROBBINS.

William Robbins md. 1st Martha (or Patsey) Farmer, daughter of Isaac Farmer, Jr.; md. 2d Phebe. His daughter Mary Robbins, wife of Joab Hyatt, was by his first wife. It is thought Phebe had no children.

Deed, October 16, 1802. Isaac Farmer to daughter Patsey Robbins, one negro girl, Penny. Test: Jesse Farmer, Elizabeth Thomas.

Will. October 2, 1826. Feb. Court, 1831. William Robbins, Senr. Lends to wife Phebe, "plantation I live on"; at her death it is to go to grandsons: Moses Robbins, son of Elijah Robbins, and Wiley Robbins, son of Eli Robbins. Residue divided between 3 sons and one daughter: Stephen, Elijah, Eli and Charity Braswell, wife of Isaac Braswell, Senr. Son: William Robbins. Executor: Son, Stephen Rob-

bins. Test: Britain Williford, Caleb Davis, Mary Ann Jackson.

[This will omits the names of the daughters, Mary Hyatt and Milly Moore. They probably received some property at marriage.]

William Robbins was a Baptist preacher and a soldier of the Revolution. [For services, see Vol. XVII, page 243.]

The line between Edgecombe and Nash counties was changed by legislative enactment in 1872. This put the old William Robbins (d. 1831) homestead in southeast Nash. Of the older Robbins, Jacob lived in Edgecombe, near Joyner's Depot until the formation of Wilson County; Eli lived in Wilson County, near Moore's Church; Arthur lived in Wilson County.

#### GENERATION III—MARY ROBBINS (HYATT).

Mary Robbins md. 1st Joab Hyatt. b. Nov. 9, 1787, son of Elisha and Elizabeth Hyatt. She md. 2d a Savage, lived at Tarboro, N. C., and died there April 16, 1871. Her three children were Jesse Battle Hyatt, b. July 1, 1820, d. Dec. 9, 1886; Henry Hyatt d. when 14 years old; Elizabeth Hyatt (b. about 1815, d. Oct., 1860); md. Isaac Braswell (b. about 1800, d. May, 1873), son of Isaac Braswell, a soldier of the Revolution. She had 13 children, four of whom are now living.

A Century of Population Growth [1790-1900] gives the information that in 1790 there were in the United States 354 families, numbering 1,690 persons named Robbins, Robin, Robens, Robin, Robins, Robons, 36 of these families were in N. C. The names of the Heads of Families living in Edgecombe were as follows:

John Robbins: 1 Free white males of 16 yrs. and up, including heads of families, 1 Free white males under 16, 3 Free white females, including heads of families, 15 slaves. Roland Robbins: 1 Free white males of 16 yrs. and up, 5 Free white males under 16, 3 Free white females. Sarah Robbins: 1 Free white males of 16 yrs and up, 4 Free white

females. Wm. Robbins: 2 Free white males of 16 yrs. and up, 4 Free white males under 16, 4 Free white females. Wm. Robbins: 1 Free white males of 16 yrs and up, 3 Free white males under 16, 2 Free white Females.

[The following miscellaneous records include all wills and one record under each name to 1827.]

Will. Thomas Robins. Dec. 4, 1775. Jan. Court, 1776. Wife: not named, "plantation I now live on," and other property during her widowhood, then to son, William. Other sons: Rowland, "land and plantation he lives upon, which I bought of Boyett," and other property; Simon, "plantation bought of Mills Barefield," and other property. Remainder to be divided among "all my daughters." Executors: Son, Rowland Robins, William Blackburn. Witnesses: William Robins, Robert Rogers. Clerk of Court: Edward Hall.

Will. Sarah Robbins. April 29, 1809. August Court, 1809. Son: Roland Robins. Daughters: Ledy Regers, Milly Rogers, Zilley, Elizabeth. Grandson: Simon Parker. Executor: Friend, Joseph Barnes. Witnesses: Thomas Dixon, James Barnes. Clerk of Court: E. Hall.

Will. John Robbins. Feb. 20, 1819. May Court, 1819. Daughters: Elizabeth D. Pender, £25; Nancy Amason, £25; Beedy, "the whole of my land and plantation, with still and blacksmith tools and 8 negroes." Granddaughter: Catherine Williams, 3 negroes and 2 cows and calves. Other legatees: Thomas Amason, 1 negro and note for \$350, rest to be sold and division made of lands and rest of negroes "hired until grandchildren are of age." Executors: John Mercer, John Bridgers, Thomas Amason. Witnesses: E. Bullock, Henry Dixon, Bursell Barnes (contested by Thomas Amason and Nancy, his wife, Elizabeth Pender and Catherine Williams, an infant by Egbert H. Williams, her next friend.

Other Wills: Roland Robbins (1832), Jacob Robbins (1841), Isaac Robbins (1847), Simon Robbins (1848).

## CONVEYANCES.

Nov. 26, 1761.. Grant. William Robens, next John Williams' corner, 528 acres.

1761. Grant. Roland Robbins.

Feb. 15, 1761. Grant. John Robins.

June 22, 1762. Deed. William Robbins to George Gardner.

Jan. 7, 1763. Deed. John Robins, planter, to Thomas White, south side of Town Creek.

April 12, 1765. John Jones to Jacob Robins.

June 12, 1765. Charles Jones and Patience, his wife to Jacob Robbins.

April 12, 1765. Charles Jones to Jacob Robins.

Jan. 18, 1771. William Boyett to Thomas Robins.

Oct. 21, 1777. William Robbins to Shadrack Proctor, south side of Town Creek, absolute estate of inheritance.

Dec. 24, 1781. Grant. Stephen Robbins.

Oct. 28, 1782. Grant. Roland Robbins.

Dec. 2, 1782. Jacob Robbins to Richard Lee.

May 15, 1782. Simon Robins to Spencer Ball.

April 2, 1786. Thomas Brand to John Robins.

May 11, 1787. Grant. Roland Robens.

Oct. 28, 1782. Grant. Sarah Robins. Fairfield, north side Toisnot Swamp, joins Caleb Williams and Roland Robbins.

Oct. 9, 1783. Grant. William Robins.

March 20, 1793. John Robbins to Cullen Andrews.

Dec. 1, 1796. Jordan Williford to Mills Robbins, on Town Creek.

Aug. 21, 1797. Jonathan Gardner to Mills (or Wells) Robbins.

July 24, 1799. Peter Slaughter to Stephen Robbins. On Town Creek. Test: J. Williams and William Robbins, Jr. Grant. William Robbins on Tyancoca Swamp. [On the north side of Coca Swamp, about a thousand feet west of the

A. C. L. Railroad is a spring of water. Near by there was once a very large poplar tree, hollow on the south side, and charred inside, an evidence of its having been used as a camping place. This place is said to have been used as a rendezvous for Tories during the Revolution.]

Feb. 20, 1800. Lancelot Verrett to Roland Robbins, south of Town Creek.

Jan. 16, 1802. Stephen Robbins and his wife Julian to Andrew Battle, adjoining William Robbins, estate of inheritance.

Dec. 13, 1804. Deed of Gift (a negro boy) Jacob Robbins to son Elisha.

July 20, 1804. Roland Robbins to Thomas Robbins.

Nov. 3, 1805. Benjamin Williams to Kinchen Robbins. Test: Stephen Robbins, William Robbins.

Feb. 21, 1806. William Robbins, Senr., to Joseph Lee. Test: Wm. Robbins, Junr., Kynchen Robbins.

Feb. 16, 1808. Sarah Robins to Elizabeth Robins, 92 acres.

Sep. 27, 1808. Jacob Robbins to son Frederick, negro and furniture.

Nov. 29, 1812. Jonathan Gardner to Prudy Robbins, south side Town Creek.

Jan. 29, 1813. Thomas Robbins to David Forchaud, one tract where said Robbins now lives.

Jan. 20, 1812. Division of William Robbins, deceased. No. I, to Thomas Robbins; No. II, to Lemuel Robbins.

Feb. 12, 1812. Lemuel Robbins to Frederick Robbins. North side of Toisnot Swamp. Test: Joseph Barnes, Eaman Flowers.

Jan. 10, 1812. Amos Johnston to Frederick Robbins.

Feb. 8, 1813. William Robbins, of Nash, to Arthur Robbins, of Edgecombe, where he formerly lived.

May 15, 1816. Deed of Gift. Elizabeth Robbins to brother, Roland Robbins.

Jan. 24, 1816. Hardy Flowers to Elisha Robbins, on Town Creek.

Aug. 15, 1816. Eli Robbins and his wife Prudence to Lamon Dunn, south side Town Creek.

March 1, 1819. Stephen Robbins to son, John Robbins.

March 1, 1819. John Robbins, Jr., to William White, east side Gay's Branch.

Aug. 10, 1821. Arthur Robbins to John R. Robbins. Test: F. F. Robbins, Simon Robbins.

Dec. 9, 1823. William Robbins to John Mills.

Sept. 11, 1825. Haymon Mann and wife Temperance, and Jesse Barnes to Arthur and Simon Robbins. Fell to Temperance by her father, William Dew, dec'd. Test: F. F. Robbins, Jas. W. Barnes.

Feb. 1, 1824. William Robbins, Senior, to Piety Robbins, granddaughter. Test: Stephen Robbins, Sr., Stephen Robbins, Jr.

Dec. 19, 1827. Obedience Robbins to John Batts, tract left by father, John Robbins, dec'd.

Feb. 1, 1827. Jonathan Gardner to Eli Robbins.

Jan. 30, 1827. Obedience Robbins to sister, Elizabeth Pender.

July 15, 1829. William Robbins, Jr., to John S. Robbins. Test: Stephen Robbins, Senr., William Robbins, Sr.

Oct. 20, 1830. John S. Robbins to Stephen Robbins, Sr.

Sept. 13, 1833. Tract belonging to heirs of Elisha Robbins, sold and bought by Jacob Robbins.

[Later compilations will cover the names Amason, Barnes, Battle, Davis, Farmer, Howell, Hyatt, Marn, Morris, Southerland, Sugg, Woodard, all of Edgecombe; Nunn, of Lenoir, and Stokes, Herring, of Craven, Duplin and Lenoir.]



## Biographical Sketches.

---

Compiled and Edited by MRS. E. E. MOFFITT.

---

### CAPTAIN EDMUND JONES.

The subject of this sketch, and the author of the article in this number of the BOOKLET, "The Fountain and Its Builder," comes from a long line of ancestry, residents of Western North Carolina. He was born on April 15, 1848, at the family residence, Clover Hill, in the Happy Valley, Caldwell County. He is the third of the name in direct descent from father to son. He was fourth child of Edmund W. and Sophia C. Jones, née Davenport. He was educated at Bingham School, the Finley High School, and the Universities of North Carolina and Virginia.

In 1864 he left college and enlisted in Lee's Army as a private soldier, notwithstanding the mandate of Mr. Seddon, the Confederate Secretary of War, who had issued an order to the effect that youths under eighteen would be allowed to continue their studies. These orders were issued by command of President Davis, who had declared that he "would not grind up the seed corn." Although two of his brothers had already given their lives to the Confederacy, and another was still in the service, he dropped everything else at his country's cry of distress and went forth. After several months of hard service, never having missed a day from duty, he was surrendered at Appomattox before he was sixteen years old. A few days after the surrender, the soldiers were paroled, and each took up his march homeward, making their way as best they could. Among them was young Edmund Jones, who after many days got back to the Happy Valley, to the great joy of his friends, to whom it had been reported that he had been killed on the retreat from Petersburg.

With unabated loyalty to his Alma Mater, he entered the University to complete his education, and there for three years pursued his studies. He then took a course at the University of Virginia to prepare himself for his chosen profession of the law.

At the early age of twenty-two, in 1870, he was elected a member of the House of the General Assembly. The country was in a deplorable condition, and it was a great compliment and a great trust to impose upon so young a man. He was again elected in 1872. Again in 1879 he returned for no other purpose than to aid his personal and family friend Governor Vance in his race for United States Senator. In 1892, when Populism first made its appearance, he was nominated by acclamation against his protest, and had to make the race in order to make the county safe against the new foe. He was elected by a great majority. At this session of the Assembly he was chosen one of the trustees of the University he loved so well.

In 1898 his sympathies became deeply aroused in behalf of the Cubans struggling for independence, and he raised a company of men which afterwards became Company C of the Second N. C. regiment U. S. V., with Mr. Jones as its Captain. He remained with his company until the close of the war and the muster out of the regiment.

In recent years he has given his whole time to his profession, steadily declining to enter politics, except to advance the fortunes of his party's candidate, until in the present year he became a candidate in the primary, along with three others, for the office of Attorney General, and was defeated by Hon. James S. Manning, running second in the race.

Captain Jones resides in Lenoir, the county seat of Caldwell County, in the northwestern part of the State, named for the revolutionary patriot, General William Lenoir, Captain Jones' great grandfather.

Captain Jones comes of a long line of ancestors who have served their country faithfully. The progenitor of the family

in America was a Welch knight by the name of Sir Charles Jones, who, either because he had made himself obnoxious to the "Round-heads," or because he refused to live as a citizen of the "Commonwealth," left his country and came to America. When Charles the Second ascended the throne, he bestowed upon Sir Charles Jones an estate near Annapolis, Maryland, a part of which, now a suburban pleasure ground, is still known as "Jones' Wood." Later, the family removed to Orange County, Virginia, where there are still many of them resident. At the close of the Revolutionary War, George Jones came to Wilkes County, North Carolina, and settled in the Valley of the Yadkin. His son Edmund was for many years a member of both Senate and House from Wilkes, and his grandson, Edmund W. Jones, was likewise State Senator, and during the trying times of the Civil War was one of the members of the Governor's Council.

None of the name have ever been politicians in the generally accepted meaning of the word. Whatever distinction may have come to them has come through the unsought preferences of their fellow-citizens, and a sense of duty well performed has been their sufficient reward.

Captain Jones' first wife, and mother of his children, was Miss Eugenia Lewis, of Raleigh, N. C., who died in 1897. In 1907 he married Miss M. W. Scott, of Petersburg, Virginia. He is still engaged in the practice of his profession, of which he has always been a zealous disciple.

*"Raleigh's Shopping Center"*

# BOYLAN-PEARCE CO.

RALEIGH'S LEADING DEPARTMENT STORE

30 COMPLETE STORES UNDER ONE ROOF



SILKS, DRESS GOODS, DRY GOODS

READY-TO-WEAR

MILLINERY



FLOOR COVERINGS



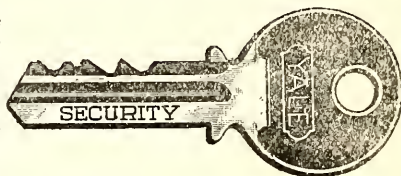
RALEIGH. - - - NORTH CAROLINA

---

## BROCKWELL KEY COMPANY

RALEIGH, NORTH CAROLINA

We make all kinds of keys. Send sample by mail and we duplicate and return the same day. We are prepared to make any quantity—one or one thousand. Yale, Sargent, Corbin, Lockwood, Norwalk, Russell and Erwin, Branford, Eagle, Reading, Penn, and all other makes.



A Big Factory for Making and Duplicating Keys Right Here in North Carolina

---

## H. STEINMETZ, Florist

RALEIGH, N. C.

Beautiful Cut Flowers for all occasions.  
Exquisite Wedding Bouquets and Floral Designs.  
Palms, Ferns, and all other kinds of House and Out Door  
Bedding Plants. A large collection of

HYACINTHS, TULIPS, DAFFODILS  
and Other Nice Bulbs for Fall Planting

All orders given prompt and personal attention. Write for quotations

# The North Carolina Booklet



## GREAT EVENTS IN NORTH CAROLINA HISTORY



PUBLISHED QUARTERLY  
BY  
THE NORTH CAROLINA SOCIETY  
DAUGHTERS OF THE REVOLUTION  
RALEIGH, N. C.

### CONTENTS

	PAGE.
Portrait—Isaac Shelby.....	<i>Frontispiece</i>
MATTHEW HARRIS JOUETT.	
Isaac Shelby .....	109
By ARCHIBALD HENDERSON.	
The Old Cemetery, Charlotte, N. C.....	145
By VIOLET G. ALEXANDER.	
The North Carolina Medical Society of 1799-1804.....	154
By MARSHALL DELANCEY HAYWOOD.	
Proceedings N. C. Society Daughters of the Revolution..	159

SINGLE NUMBERS 35 CENTS

\$1.00 THE YEAR

*Entered at the Postoffice at Raleigh, N. C., July 15, 1905, under the Act of  
Congress of March 3, 1879*



# The North Carolina Booklet

## Great Events in North Carolina History

VOLUME XVI of THE BOOKLET will be issued quarterly by the North Carolina Society, Daughters of the Revolution, beginning July, 1916. THE BOOKLET will be published in July, October, January, and April. Price \$1.00 per year, 35 cents for single copy.

EDITOR:

MISS MARY HILLIARD HINTON.

BIOGRAPHICAL EDITOR:

MRS. E. E. MOFFITT.

### VOLUME XVI.

Isaac Shelby: Revolutionary Patriot and Border Hero—Dr. Archibald Henderson.

An Educational Practice in Colonial North Carolina—Edgar W. Knight.

George Selwyn—Miss Violet G. Alexander.

Martha McFarlane Bell, a Revolutionary Heroine—Miss Mary Hilliard Hinton.

North Carolinians in the President's Cabinet, Part III: William A. Graham—Chief Justice Walter Clark.

Historic Homes, Part VII: The Fountain, the Home of Colonel Davenport—Colonel Edmund Jones.

North Carolinians in the President's Cabinet, Part IV: James Cochran Dobbin—Dr. Henry Elliot Shepherd.

A History of Rowan County—Dr. Archibald Henderson.

Edgecombe County History and some of her Distinguished Sons—Mrs. John A. Weddell.

Historical Book Reviews will be contributed by Mrs. Nina Holland Covington. These will be reviews of the latest historical works written by North Carolinians.

The Genealogical Department will be continued, with a page devoted to Genealogical Queries and Answers as an aid to genealogical research in the State.

The North Carolina Society Colonial Dames of America will furnish copies of unpublished records for publication in THE BOOKLET.

Biographical Sketches will be continued under Mrs. E. E. Moffitt.

Old letters, heretofore unpublished, bearing on the Social Life of the different periods of North Carolina History, will appear hereafter in THE BOOKLET.

This list of subjects may be changed, as circumstances sometimes prevent the writers from keeping their engagements.

The histories of the separate counties will in the future be a special feature of THE BOOKLET. When necessary, an entire issue will be devoted to a paper on one county.

Parties who wish to renew their subscriptions to THE BOOKLET for Vol. XVI are requested to give notice at once.

Many numbers of Volumes I to XV for sale.

For particulars address

MISS MARY HILLIARD HINTON,

Editor North Carolina Booklet,

"Midway Plantation," Raleigh, N. C.



*The*  
**NORTH CAROLINA BOOKLET**

---

*"Carolina! Carolina! Heaven's blessings attend her!  
While we live we will cherish, protect and defend her!"*

---

Published by  
**THE NORTH CAROLINA SOCIETY**  
**DAUGHTERS OF THE REVOLUTION**

---

The object of THE BOOKLET is to aid in developing and preserving North Carolina History. The proceeds arising from its publication will be devoted to patriotic purposes. EDITOR.

---

RALEIGH  
COMMERCIAL PRINTING COMPANY  
PRINTERS AND BINDERS

## ADVISORY BOARD OF THE NORTH CAROLINA BOOKLET

MRS. HUBERT HAYWOOD.  
MRS. E. E. MOFFITT.  
MR. R. D. W. CONNOR.  
DR. D. H. HILL.  
DR. WILLIAM K. BOYD.  
CAPT. S. A. ASHE.  
MISS ADELAIDE L. FRIES.  
MISS MARTHA HELEN HAYWOOD.

DR. RICHARD DILLARD.  
DR. KEMP P. BATTLE.  
MR. JAMES SPRUNT.  
MR. MARSHALL DELANCEY HAYWOOD  
CHIEF JUSTICE WALTER CLARK.  
MAJOR W. A. GRAHAM.  
DR. CHARLES LEE SMITH.

EDITOR :

MISS MARY HILLIARD HINTON.

BIOGRAPHICAL EDITOR :

MRS. E. E. MOFFITT.

## OFFICERS OF THE NORTH CAROLINA SOCIETY DAUGHTERS OF THE REVOLUTION 1914-1916

REGENT :

MISS MARY HILLIARD HINTON.

VICE-REGENT :

MRS. MARSHALL WILLIAMS.

HONORARY REGENTS :

MRS. E. E. MOFFITT.

MRS. T. K. BRUNER.

RECORDING SECRETARY :

MRS. L. E. COVINGTON.

CORRESPONDING SECRETARY :

MRS. PAUL H. LEE.

TREASURER :

MRS. CHAS. LEE SMITH.

REGISTRAR :

MISS SARAH W. ASHE.

CUSTODIAN OF RELICS :

MRS. JOHN E. RAY.

## CHAPTER REGENTS

Bloomsbury Chapter-----Mrs. HUBERT HAYWOOD, Regent.  
Penelope Barker Chapter-----Mrs. PATRICK MATTHEW, Regent.  
Sir Walter Raleigh Chapter-----Mrs. I. M. MEEKINS, Regent.  
General Francis Nash Chapter-----Miss REBECCA CAMERON, Regent.  
Roanoke Chapter-----Mrs. F. M. ALLEN, Regent.  
Mary Slocumb Chapter-----Miss GEORGIE HICKS, Regent.  
Colonel Thomas Robeson Chapter-----Mrs. ANNIE BUIE, Regent.

FOUNDER OF THE NORTH CAROLINA SOCIETY AND REGENT 1896-1902 :

MRS. SPIER WHITAKER.\*

REGENT 1902 :

MRS. D. H. HILL, SR.†

REGENT 1902-1906 :

MRS. THOMAS K. BRUNER.

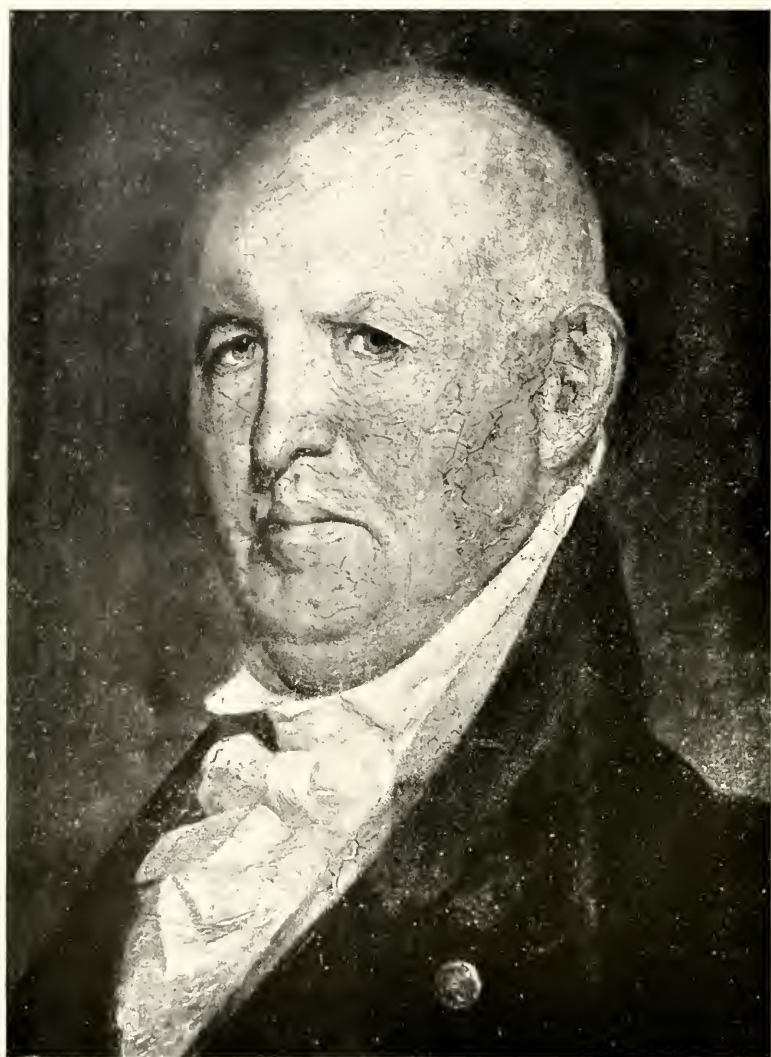
REGENT 1906-1910 :

MRS. E. E. MOFFITT.

\*Died November 25, 1911.

† Died December 12, 1904.





ISAAC SHELBY

MATTHEW HARRIS JOUETT

From his most famous portrait, never before reproduced, owned by  
William R. Shelby, Esq., of Grand Rapids, Michigan

# The North Carolina Booklet

---

Vol. XVI

JANUARY, 1917

No. 3

---

## Isaac Shelby Revolutionary Patriot and Border Hero

---

By ARCHIBALD HENDERSON.

---

Among that group of early pioneers whose intrepid daring and superior sagacity, tested in the crucible of border warfare and frontier conflict, were potent agencies in laying the foundation stones of the republic, Isaac Shelby occupies a position of conspicuous leadership in both martial and civil life. Deficient in the vision of a Richard Henderson or the craft of a Daniel Boone, Shelby possessed much of the glorified common sense which distinguished James Robertson. Temperamentally more phlegmatic than his comrade in arms, the impetuous John Sevier, he exhibited in the crucial moments of his career a headlong bravery and an unwavering self-control which marked him as a trustworthy leader of men. In personal bravery the match for his friend, George Rogers Clark, Shelby was a born fighter; and although not endowed with the tactical brilliance of the conqueror of the Northwest, he exhibited such unerring judgment in battle and such poise in leadership as to inspire the confident faith which procures ultimate victory. His contribution to the cause of American independence is an integral part of the history of the Revolution. This chapter which to this very day, in any adequate sense, remains unwritten, the present monograph purposes to supply.

It was from a line of Welsh ancestors that Isaac Shelby derived the phlegmatic temperament and cautious balance which stood him in such good stead throughout his eventful and turbulent career. His father, Evan Shelby, was born in Wales in 1720; and with his father and mother, Evan and Catherine Shelby, he emigrated to Maryland about 1735. The

family settled in the neighborhood of Hagerstown, near the North Mountain, then Frederick County. Strength of character and an iron constitution, reinforced by the qualities of tenacity and approved courage, express the dominant characteristics of this famous border character, Evan Shelby, Isaac's father. In the French and Indian wars which began in 1754, he served with distinction, first it is presumed, as a private soldier; but in 1756 his recognized skill as a hunter and woodsman, acquired in patrolling the border and guarding the frontier, as well as his bravery, led to his appointment as Lieutenant of Maryland troops. It is related that on Forbes' campaign, "he gave chase to an Indian spy, in view of many of the troops, overtaking and tomahawking him."<sup>1</sup> The following letter is like a ray of light flashed into the dim obscurity of the mid-period of the eighteenth century. It is a letter of Governor Sharpe, of Maryland, to General Forbes:<sup>2</sup>

1ST OF AUGUST, 1758.

*To General Forbes:*

SIR:—This serves to introduce to you Capt. Shelby, who waits on your Excellency with his company of volunteers to receive your commands. He has served as a Lieut. more than two years in the Maryland troops & has always behaved well, which encourages me to hope that he and his company will be found useful on the present occasion. The expense I have been at in furnishing his men with blankets, leggins, moccasins & camp kettles is £82-3-2 pens currency, & as Capt. Shelby & his lieut., who was likewise an officer in our Troops until the end of May last, found themselves under some Difficulties by not being paid the arrears that were due them, I have let each of them have £15 out of the £510 currency, which, with Your Excellency's approbation, Mr. Kilby is to advance towards paying the Maryland Forces. I most sincerely wish Your Excellency the perfect Recovery of Your Health & a successful Campaign, & I am &c.

Serving as Captain of Maryland troops, in the provincial army destined for the reduction of Fort Duquesne, Evan Shelby was engaged in a number of severe battles in the course of Braddock's war. In 1758, in pursuance of Governor Sharpe's orders, he reconnoitred and marked out the route

---

<sup>1</sup>Draper's *King's Mountain and Its Heroes*, 411.

<sup>2</sup>Maryland *Calendar State Papers*, ii. 1757-61, 237.



of a road to Fort Cumberland; and following his report to the Governor that "three hundred and fifty men might open such a road as he proposed in three weeks," as it was not more than sixty miles in length, the road was laid out by him with the assistance of the desired quota of men, by order of Governor Sharpe.<sup>3</sup> As a soldier he was conspicuous for gallantry in the battle fought at Loyal Hanning (now Bedford), Pennsylvania; and he led the advance guard of General Forbes, when he took possession of Fort DuQuesne in 1758.

Early in the 'sixties, it is reasonable to suppose, he removed with his family to Pennsylvania—perhaps as the result of uncertainty in land titles in consequence of the dispute over territory between Maryland and Pennsylvania. For some years thereafter he engaged in trade with the Indians of the Northwest. During the conferences with the Indians, held in connection with the Treaty of Fort Stanwix, lasting from October 24 until November 6, 1768, an extensive grant of land was made by the Six Nations of Indians to twenty-three Indian traders, most of them from Pennsylvania, to recompense them for very large losses incurred during the war of 1763. In the list of the twenty-three names is found that of Evan Shelby, along with such other well known names as William Trent, David Franks, John Baynton, Samuel Wharton, and George Morgan. This grant included all that part of the present state of West Virginia lying between the Ohio, the Little Kanawha, and the Monongahela rivers, the Laurel Ridge, and the South line of Pennsylvania extended to the Ohio. Trent and Wharton, two of the traders, went to England, to endeavor to obtain a confirmation of the grant, which was named Indiana by those who wished to erect it into a colony; but while there they were induced to throw in their interests with Thomas Walpole, Benjamin Franklin, and others, in securing the grant of Vandalia, which included the

---

<sup>3</sup>Cf. Sharpe to Capt. Evan Shelby, June 15, 1758; Maryland *Calendar State Papers*. Letter Book III, 206; Sharpe to Calvert, Letter Book I, 358-9. For Capt. Evan Shelby's report from Frederick, June 25, 1758, cf. also Maryland *Calendar State Papers*, Letter Book III, 212.

grants to the Ohio Company and to William Trent and his associates, and extended to the mouth of Scioto. Although the draft of the royal grant had actually been prepared in the spring of 1775, it ultimately failed of confirmation by the Crown.<sup>4</sup>

During the third quarter of the eighteenth century, ranches, or "cow-pens" were established at many places in the Piedmont region of Virginia, North Carolina, and South Carolina. The more adventurous farmers, taking advantage of the fertile pastures of the uplands, pressed far beyond the ordinary farmer's frontier, and herded in large flocks of cattle and stock. Many of these were wandering wild upon the country; as a contemporary observer says, "notwithstanding every precaution, very great numbers of black cattle, horses and hogs—run at large, entirely wild, without any other proprietors than those of the ground they happened to be found upon."<sup>5</sup> In 1771, according to the best authorities, Isaac Shelby, the son of Evan Shelby, was residing in Western Virginia, living the life of the rancher, and engaged in the business of feeding and attending to the herds of cattle over the extensive ranges of the uplands.<sup>6</sup> And in this same year, as Draper states, the Shelby connection removed to the Holston country, in that twilight zone of the debatable ground between North Carolina and Virginia.<sup>7</sup> Evan Shelby settled on the site of the present Bristol, Tennessee; and in conjunction with his friend, Isaac Baker, purchased the Sapling Grove tract, of 1946 acres, Robert Preston dividing it equally between them.

---

<sup>4</sup>*Plain Facts*, Philadelphia, 1781. *New Governments West of the Alleghenies Before 1780*, by G. H. Alden, Madison, Wis., 1897. Cf. also, Hanna's *The Wilderness Trail*, ii, 59-60.

<sup>5</sup>J. F. D. Smyth: *A Tour in the United States of America*, ii, 143-4.

<sup>6</sup>L. C. Draper: *Kings Mountain and Its Heroes*, 411.

<sup>7</sup>Summers, in his *Southwest Virginia*, 1903, 671-2, states that "in the year 1765 or shortly thereafter, Evan Shelby and Isaac Baker left their homes in Maryland and came to the Holston country." The facts, as stated above, would indicate that the date, 1765, is incorrect, with reference to the migration to the Holston country of Evan Shelby, at least. It may be that Isaac Baker preceded Evan Shelby to the Holston country, and induced him to remove thither.

Isaac Shelby was born near the North Mountain, in the vicinity of Hagerstown, Maryland, on December 11, 1750, being the eldest son of Evan Shelby and his first wife, Letitia Scott, of Frederickstown, Maryland. The intimacy between Evan Shelby and his friend Isaac Baker is shown by the fact that Shelby named one of his sons Isaac and Baker named one of his sons Evan. Endowed, like his father, with an iron constitution, and reared in a martial atmosphere, Isaac early adapted himself to the strenuous life of the pioneer and became expert in the arts of hunting and woodcraft. Even before he reached man's estate he served as Deputy Sheriff of Frederick County, Maryland—a tribute to his self-control and personal prowess.<sup>8</sup>

Despite the fact that the country was continually harrassed with a succession of Indian wars, young Isaac nevertheless succeeded in obtaining the rudiments of a plain English education. After the removal of the Shelbys to Kings Meadows (near Bristol), Evan Shelby and his four sons, Isaac, Evan, Moses, and James, continued to herd and graze cattle on an extensive scale along the Virginia border, about forty miles north of Watauga.<sup>9</sup>

An authentic account of the career of Evan Shelby and his services to the cause of American independence would constitute an extended chapter in the history of Indian battles and border warfare. As indicative of the high estimation in which he was held in his former home, one may cite the following fragment of a letter to Captain Evan Shelby from General William Thompson, bearing the address, "Carlyle, 6th July, 1775."

"Had General Washington been sure you could have joined the army at Boston without first seeing your family (you) would have been appointed Lieut. Colo. (of the) Rifle Battalion and an express sent by you being so-----the

---

<sup>8</sup>This statement is made on the authority of Cecil B. Hartley, in his sketch of Isaac Shelby, published in 1860, along with *The Life and Adventures of Louis Wetzcl*.

<sup>9</sup>James R. Gilmore: *The Rear Guard of the Revolution*, 1903, 64.

general concluded it (would not be—) for you to take the field before seeing your family. I leave for Boston on Monday night."

Upon his Sapling Grove plantation Evan Shelby built a fort named Shelby's Station, where hundreds were sometimes fortified during the Revolution. At this fort the Shelbys kept a store, which supplied the pioneers with ammunition, dress stuffs, articles of food and drink. Daniel Boone purchased supplies here in preparation for his ill-timed and ill-fated expedition in 1773. The stout old Welshman, stern though he may have been, was evidently not averse to conviviality; on an old ledger, dated Staunton, Va., Nov. 22, 1773, conspicuous in the account against Evan Shelby are such entries as: "1 Bowl tody," "1 Mug cider," "1 Bowl Bumbo," "To Club in Wine." His first wife, Letitia Cox, died in 1777, and is buried at Charlottesville, Va. Late in life he was married to Isabella Elliott; and the records show that this prudent lady required one-third of his estate to be deeded to her before marriage. In 1794 Evan Shelby died, at the age of 74, and his widow afterwards was married again to one Dromgoole. His remains now repose in Bristol, Tenn., on the lot now occupied by the Lutheran Church, on the corner of Fifth and Shelby streets.<sup>11</sup>

It was not long after the settlement of the Shelbys at Sapling Grove that they formed the acquaintance of such leading men of the border as James Robertson, John Sevier, Daniel Boone, and William Russell. A little incident indicative of the experience of even the most expert pioneers of the day at the hands of the treacherous and furtive red men is recorded in that valuable repository of historical lore, Bradford's *Notes on Kentucky*. "In 1772," records Isaac Shelby in one of these notes, although we know from other sources that he should have said 1771, "I met Daniel Boone below the Holstein settlement, alone; he informed me that he had spent the two years preceding that time in a hunt on Louisa river

---

<sup>11</sup>Cf. Oliver Taylor: *Historic Sullivan*, 1909. Also L. P. Summers: *Southwest Virginia*, 1903.

(now Kentucky), so called by all the Long Hunters; that he had been robbed the day before, by the Cherokee Indians, of all the proceeds of his hunt."

It was at the instance of the Shelbys that Sevier moved to the Holston settlements. In 1772 John Sevier attended a horse race at the Watauga Old Field, and witnessed the theft of a horse by a burly fellow named Shoate. Sevier was about to leave, disgusted by the incident—for the thief pretended that he had won the stolen horse as the result of a wager—when Evan Shelby remarked to him: "Never mind the rascals; they'll soon poplar"—by which he meant, take a canoe and get out of the country. One of the first measures taken by the Watauga settlements was the passage of laws to protect them from horse thieves. The following year the Seviers removed to Keywood, about six miles from the Shelbys, later settling in Washington County.<sup>12</sup>

It was not long before Isaac Shelby, young though he was, came to be regarded as a man of promise in the frontier settlement. In 1774 he was appointed Lieutenant in the militia by Colonel William Preston, the County Lieutenant of Fincastle County. The anecdote is related that, when Isaac thoughtlessly sat down instead of remaining at attention while his commission was being written out by Col. Preston, his father, with characteristically imperious manner, sternly admonished him:

"Get up, you young dog, and make your obeisance to the Colonel!"

Whereupon the young officer, considerably abashed, arose and made the *amende honorable* to his superior officer. In time to come the graceless "young dog" was to prove himself, as soldier and statesman, the superior of his bull-dog father, the grizzled veteran and Indian fighter.

Endowed, like his father, with an herculean frame, though built on a somewhat larger scale, he presents a formidable and impressive appearance in the portraits that have come

---

<sup>12</sup>Draper Mss.; also cf. F. M. Turner: *Life of General John Sevier*, 1910.



down to us—with firm, compressed lips, heavy chin, massive features, beetling brows over fixed, deep-set eyes—a man of “uncommon intelligence and stern, unbending integrity.”

## II.

Daniel Boone's attempt, without shadow of title, to make a settlement in Kentucky, in September, 1773, had met with a bloody repulse on the part of the Indians. In a letter to Dartmouth, Dunmore said in regard to the “Americans,” the pioneer settlers: “They acquire no attachment to place: But wandering about Seems engrafted in their Nature; and it is a weakness incident to it that they Should for ever Imagine the Lands further off, are Still better than those upon which they are already Settled.”<sup>13</sup> The continued encroachments of the white settlers upon the Indian hunting grounds fanned to flame the smouldering animosity of the red man. The Six Nations, at the Treaty of Fort Stanwix in 1768, had sold to the Crown, through Sir William Johnson, their unwarranted claim to a vast stretch of territory extending as far to the southward as the Kentucky River. The Southern Indians, the aboriginal occupants of the soil, indignantly denied the right of the Six Nations to this Territory. The Indians along the border were aroused to a pitch of excessive hostility by the continued incursions of the whites. A succession of attacks by the Indians upon outlying and scattered settlements soon led to bloody reprisals on the part of the whites. The open letter of Conolly, Governor Dunmore's agent, calling upon the backwoodsmen to prepare to defend themselves from the attacks of the Shawnees, was issued on April 21, 1774, and the barbarous murder of Logan's family at the mouth of Yellow Creek on April 30, by one Greathouse and a score of carousing white companions, rendered the conflict inevitable. Yet actual hostilities were slow to commence, and it was not until the summer of 1774 that Daniel Boone and Michael Stoner were dispatched by Dunmore to Kentucky, to conduct

---

<sup>13</sup>Draper Mss., 15J4-48.



into the settlements the various parties of surveyors scattered about through the Kentucky area. The war was now begun, and Lord Dunmore, hoping to reconcile the differences between the colonists and England by a successful campaign against the Indians, proceeded vigorously to carry the war into the enemy's country.

There were two divisions in Lord Dunmore's army, one of fully twelve hundred men under the command of the earl in person, the other of about eleven hundred strong, under the command of General Andrew Lewis, a stalwart backwoods fighter. For some inexplicable motive, which has been suspected, no doubt, erroneously, as an attempt at treachery to the Americans, Dunmore decided not to unite his force with that of Lewis; and after a long march he took up his position at the mouth of the Hockhocking, erected a stockade styled Fort Gower, and awaited news of Lewis's brigade. The division of Lewis reached the mouth of the Great Kanawha River on October 6 and encamped at Point Pleasant. On the ninth the order came to Lewis from Dunmore to join him at the Indian towns near the Pickaway Plains. The sagacious Cornstalk, the Indian leader, divining the plan of the whites, resolved to hurl his entire force of one thousand warriors upon the sleeping army at Point Pleasant.

Of the several commands under Lewis one was composed of the Fincastle men, from the Holston, Clinch, Watauga, and New River settlements, under Col. William Christian. The Holston men were the advance guard of civilization at this period, the most daring settlers who had pushed farthest out into the western wilderness. In Col. Christian's command were five captains, Evan Shelby, Russell, Herbert, Draper, and Buford; and under Evan Shelby were his sons, Isaac, a lieutenant, and James; and James Robertson and Valentine Sevier, orderly sergeants.

The battle which ensued has been described in such accurate and graphic terms in a letter to John Shelby, by Isaac Shelby,

who played an important part in the fierce engagement, that his letter is given here in full:<sup>14</sup>

CAMP OPPOSITE TO THE MOUTH OF GREAT CANAWAY.

October 16th, 1774.

DR. UNCLE:—I Gladly imbrace this opportunity to Acquaint You that we are all three<sup>15</sup> yet alive th(r)o Gods Mercies & I Sincerely wish that this may find you & your Family in the Station of Health that we left you. I never had anything Worth Notice to quaint you with since I left you till now, the Express seems to be Hurrying that I Cant write you with the same Coolness & Deliberation as I would; we arrived at the mouth (of) Canaway Thursday 6th. Octr. and incampd on a fine piece of Ground with an intent to wait for the Governor & his party but hearing that he was going another way we Contented our selves to stay there a few days to rest the troops &c, when we looked upon our selves to be in safety till Monday morning the 10th Instant when two of our Compys. went out before day to hunt. To wit Val. Sevier & Jas Robison & Discovered a party of Indians; as I expect you will hear something of our Battle before you get this I have here stated this affair nearly to you.

For the Satisfaction of the people in your parts in this they have a true state of the Memorable Battle faught at the mouth of the Great Canaway on the 10th. Instant; Monday morning about half an Hour before Sunrise two of Capt. Russells Compy. Discovered a large party of Indians about a mile from Camp one of which men was killed the Other made his Escape & brought in his intilligence;<sup>16</sup> in two or three minutes affter two of Capt Shelbys Compy. Came in and Confirmed the Account. Colo. Andrew Lewis being Informed thereof Immediately ordered Colo. Charles Lewis to take the Command of 150 men from Augusta and with him went Capt. Dickison. Capt. Harrison. Capt. Willson, Capt. Jno. Lewis from Augusta and Capt. Lockridge which made the first division. Colo. Fleming was also ordered to take the Command of one hundred & fifty more Consisting of Botetourt Fincastle and Bedford Troops Viz. Capt. Buford of Bedford Capt. Love of Botetourt Capt. Shelby & Capt. Russell of Fincastle which made the second Division. Colo. Lewis marched with his Division to the

---

<sup>14</sup>The copy here used is made directly from the original in the Draper Mss., 7 ZZ 2. The text used by Roosevelt (*Winning of the West*) is drawn from a manuscript copy of Shelby's letter, in the Campbell Mss.

<sup>15</sup>Captain Evan Shelby and his two sons, Isaac and James.

<sup>16</sup>These were Joseph Hughey, of Shelby's company, and James Mooney, of Russell's. The former was killed by a white renegade, Tavenor Ross, while the latter brought the news to camp. Mooney was a former neighbor of Daniel Boone, upon the Yadkin in North Carolina, and had accompanied him upon the disastrous Kentucky hunting expedition of 1769. He was killed at Point Pleasant. Cf. *Dunmore's War*, edited by Thwaites and Kellogg, 271-2.

Right some Distance up from the Ohio. Colo. Fleming with his Division up the bank of the Ohio to the left: Colo. Lewiss Division had not marchd. little more than a quarter of a mile from Camp; when about sunrise, an Attack was made on the front of his Division in a most Vigorous manner by the United tribes of Indians—Shawnees; Delewares; Mingoes; Taways,<sup>17</sup> and of several Other Nations in Number not less than Eight Hundred and by many thought to be a thousand; in this Heavy Attack Colonel Charles Lewis received a wound which soon after Caused his Death and several of his men fell in the Spott in fact the Augusta Division was forced to give way to the heavy fire of the Enemy. In about a second of a minute after the Attack on Colo. Lewiss Division the Enemy Engaged the Front of Colo. Flemings Division on the Ohio; and in a short time Colo. Fleming recd. two balls thro his left Arm and one thro his breast; and after animating the Captains and soldiers in a Calm manner to the pursuit of Victory returned to Camp, the loss of the Brave Colonels was Sensibly felt by the Officers in perticular, But the Augusta troops being shortly Reinforced from Camp by Colonel Field with his Company together with Capt. M'Dowel, Capt. Mathews & Capt. Stuart from Augusta, Capt. John Lewis, Capt. Paulin Capt. Arbuckle & Capt. M'Clanahan from Botetourt, the Enemy no longer able to Maintain their Ground was forced to give way till they were in a Line with the troops left in action on Bancks of Ohio. by Colo Fleming in this precipitate retreat Colo. Field was killed, after which Capt. Shelby was ordered to take the Commd. During this time which was till after twelve of the Clock, the Action continued Extremely Hott, the Close underwood many steep bancks & Loggs favoured their retreat, and the Bravest of their men made the use of themselves, whilst others were throwing their dead into the Ohio, and Carrying of(f) their wounded, after twelve the Action in a small degree abated but Continued sharp Enough till after one oClock Their Long retreat gave them a most advantages spot of ground; from whence it Appeared to the Officers so difficult to dislodge them; that it was thought most adviseable to stand as the line then was formed which was about a mile and a quarter in length, and had till then sustained a Constant and Equal weight of fire from wing to wing, it was till half an Hour of Sun sett they Continued firing on us which we returned to their Disadvantage at length Night Coming on they found a safe retreat. They had not the satisfaction of scalping any of our men save One or two straglers whom they Killed before the ingagement many of their dead they scalped rather than we should have them but our troops scalped upwards of twenty of those who were first killed; Its Beyond a Doubt their Loss in Number farr Exceeds ours, which is Considerable.

Field Officers killed Colo. Charles Lewis, and Colo. Jno. Fields, Field Officers wounded Colo. Willm. Fleming; Cpts. killed John

---

<sup>17</sup>The Ottawas, a Northwestern tribe.

Murray Capt. Saml. Willson Capt. Robt. McClanahan, Capt. Jas. Ward, Captains wounded Thos Buford John Dickison & John Seidmore, Subbalterns Killed Lieutenant Hugh Allen, Ensign Mathew Brakin Ensign Cundiff, Subbalterns wounded, Lieut. Lard; Lieut. Vance Lieut. Goldman Lieut. Jas. Robison about 46 killed & about 80 wounded from this Sir you may Judge that we had a Very hard day its really Impossible for me to Express or you to Concieve Acclamations that we were under, sometimes, the Hidious Cries of the Enemy and the groans of our wound(ed) men lying around was Enough to shuder the stoutest hart its the general Opinion of the Officers that we shall soon have another Ingagement as we have now got Over into the Enemys Country; we Expect to meet the Governor about forty or fifty miles from here nothing will save us from another Battle Unless they Attact the Governors Party. five men that Came in Dadys (daddy's) Company were killed, I dont know that you were Acquainted with any of them Except Marek Williams who lived with Roger Top. Acquaint Mr. Carmack that his son was slightly wounded thro the shoulder and arm & that he is in a likely way of Recovery we leave him at mouth of Canaway & one Very Carefull hand to take Care of him; there is a garrison & three Hundred men left at that place with a surgeon to Heal the wounded we Expect to Return to the Garrison in about 16 days from the Shawny Towns.

I have nothing more Perticular to Acquaint you with Concerning the Battle, as to the Country I cant now say much in praise of any that I have yet seen. Dady intended writing to you but did not know of the Express till the time was too short I have wrote to Mam(m)y tho not so fully as to you as I then expected the Express was Just going. we seem to be all in a Moving Posture Just going from this place so that I must Conclude wishing you health and prosperity till I see you and Your Family in the meantime I am yr truly Effectionate Friend & Humble Servt

ISAAC SHELBY.

To Mr. John Shelby Holstons River Fincastle County favr. by Mr. Benja. Gray.

This recital, written by the young Isaac Shelby, modestly omits any mention of the very important part which he himself played in the battle. Upon the death of Colonel John Field, Captain Evan Shelby was ordered to the command, and upon so doing he gave over the command of his own company to his son, Isaac, who, while only holding the rank of a lieutenant, acted in the capacity of a captain during about half the battle. Cornstalk, Logan, Red Eagle, and other brave chieftains, fighting fiercely, led in the attack; and above the terrible din and clangor of the battle could be heard the

deep, sonorous voice of Cornstalk encouraging his warriors with the injunction: "Be strong! Be strong!" The Indians led by Cornstalk adopted the tactics of making successive rushes upon the whites by which they expected to drive the frontiersmen into the two rivers, "like so many bullocks," as the chief later explained. So terrific were the onslaughts of the red men that the lines of the frontiersmen had frequently to fall back; but these withdrawals were only temporary, as they were skillfully reinforced each time and again moved steadily forward to the conflict. About half an hour before sunset General Lewis adopted the dangerous expedient of a flank movement. Captains Shelby, Matthews, Arbuckle, and Stuart were sent with a detachment up Crooked Creek, which runs into the Kanawha a little above Point Pleasant, with a view to securing a ridge in the rear of the enemy, from which their lines could be enfiladed. Concealed by the undergrowth along the bank they endeavored to execute this hazardous movement; and John Sawyers, an orderly sergeant, was dispatched by Isaac Shelby with a few men of the company to dislodge the Indians from their protected position. This fierce attack from an unsuspected quarter alarmed the Indians. Cornstalk leaped to the conclusion that this was the advance guard of Christian's party, and giving the alarm hurried his forces to the other side of Old Town Creek. The battle continued in a desultory way until sunset, and no decisive victory had been achieved. But Cornstalk and his warriors had had enough, and withdrew during the night.<sup>18</sup>

In this remarkable battle, the most stubborn and hotly contested fight ever made by the Indians against the English, it was the flanking movement of the detachment in which Isaac Shelby took a leading part that turned the tide and decided the victory for the whites. This battle, which brought about

---

<sup>18</sup>Compare the account given by Withers in his *Chronicles of Border Warfare*, edited and annotated by R. G. Thwaites; Cincinnati, 1908. See also Stuart's *Narrative*, in *Virginia Historical Collections*, vol. I. The most exhaustive account of the entire campaign is embodied in *Dunmore's War*, edited by Thwaites and Kellogg, Madison, 1905. An excellent map is found in Avery's *History of the United States*, vol. 5, p. 183.



an early conclusion of peace, was from this standpoint completely decisive in character; and it should not be forgotten that Isaac Shelby, the twenty-four year old captain, thus played an important role in this thrilling scene of warfare preliminary to the great drama of the Revolution. "This action," comments Isaac Shelby in his *Autobiography*, "is known to be the hardest ever fought with the Indians and in its consequences was of the greatest importance as it was fought while the first Congress was sitting at Philadelphia, and so completely were the savages chastised, particularly the Shawnees and Delawares (the two most formidable tribes) that they could not be induced by British agents among them, neither to the North nor South, to commence hostilities against the United States before July, 1776, in which time the frontiers had become considerably stronger and the settlement of Kentucky had commenced."

Indeed it was this victory of the Great Kanawha, with its temporary subjugation of the savages, which made possible Colonel Richard Henderson's gallant advance into Kentucky in March-April, 1775, ultimately eventuating in the acquisition of Kentucky and the vast trans-Alleghany region to the territory of the United States. Shelby's comment is significant in its emphasis, as he was present at the "Great Treaty" at the Sycamore Shoals of the Watauga in March, 1775, and a little later was serving as surveyor in the employ of the Transylvania Company. Without the impetus given to the colonization of the trans-Alleghany region by Richard Henderson and the Transylvania Company, there would have been no bulwark on the west against the incursions of savages from that quarter during the Revolution; and at the conclusion of peace in 1783, the western boundary of the Confederation of States would doubtless have been the Alleghany Mountains and not the Mississippi River. Isaac Shelby was a hero of the first battle preluding the mighty conflict which was ultimately to end victoriously at Yorktown.<sup>19</sup>

---

<sup>19</sup>Cf. Hale's *Trans-Alleghany Pioneers*, Cincinnati, 1886, ch. XXXII. Also Todd's *Life of Shelby*, in National Portrait Gallery, I, 1835.



At the close of the campaign, if not immediately following the battle, a small palisaded rectangle, about eighty yards long, with block houses at two of its corners, was erected at Point Pleasant by order of Lord Dunmore. This stockade, entitled Fort Blair, was strongly garrisoned, and the chief command was given to that splendid border fighter, Captain William Russell. The young Isaac Shelby, in recognition of his valued services in the recent bloody battle, was made second in command.<sup>20</sup> It was here, says tradition, that the Indian chief, Cornstalk, came to shake the hand of the young paleface brave, Isaac Shelby, who had led the strategic flank movement which stampeded his army.<sup>21</sup>

The following interesting letter, addressed to "Mr. Isaac Shelby, Holston," explains the state of affairs which then existed in that region, and the movements being set on foot. It is a double letter, for at the end of Col. William Christian's letter to Isaac Shelby, which Shelby had forwarded to Colo. William Russell, the latter wrote a supplementary letter, and returned the whole to Isaac Shelby.

DUNKARD BOTTOM, February 18, 1775.

DEAR SIR:—I have lately been at Williamsburg, and applied to his Excellency the Governor to know what was to be done with the garrison at point pleasant. His Lordship has been disappointed in getting the consent of the Assembly for the continuance of the Company, but he desired me to acquaint Captain Russell that he was to return to his post and remain there until the treaty with the Indians, which is to be at Fort Dunmore in may, or until further orders. I think it will be in june before that treaty is finished & also that his Lordship wishes that the garrison could be kept (?) up from a desire he has to serve the Frontiers. I have wrote to Captain Russell to come down in order to take the charge of one of the Shawnese Hostages who was sent up with me. The design of sending him is to satisfy the Indians

---

<sup>20</sup>Isaac Shelby's *Autobiography*. Cf. also *Dunmore's War*, p. 310 n; Chas. S. Todd's *Life of Shelby*, National Portrait Gallery, vol. I. Thwaites says that General Lewis, who reached Point Pleasant on October 28, left there a garrison of fifty men under Captain Russell. Cf. Withers's *Chronicles of Border Warfare*, 1908, p. 176n.

<sup>21</sup>*Southern Heroism in Decisive Battles for American Independence*, by Charles Henry Todd, in *Journal of American History*, vol. II, No. 2.

of our friendly intentions, in contradiction to several reports spread among them by pensilvania Traders intimating that we designed falling on them next spring. The reports it was feared might set on foot a general confederacy among the Shawnese & their neighbors.

I expect Captain Russell will contrive to be as far as McGavocks the 7th. of March on his way to the post and I now write to you thinking it may reach you much sooner than Captain Russell could send to you, thereby to give you more time to prepare for joining him.

I saw Jno. Douglass this evening & he thinks that near 50 men of those now on duty will agree to continue & perhaps that will be enough. If you get this letter quickly would it not be well for you to ride over and consult with the Captain what is to be done. It is certain that you or him must set of (off) soon with the Indian, or I think it may (mutilated) to come the time I have mentioned.

A convention of delegates is to be held at Richmond the 20 of March to consist of two members from each county & corporation, what is to be the consequence of the present disputes is yet uncertain, but nothing pacifick is expected. The lowland people are generally arming and preparing themselves.

Please to give my compliments to your Father & tell him that it is most probable that the Committee will meet the day of our Election which is to be the 7 of March & that if he can make it convenient he may as well come up.

I am Sir Your friend & servant,

WM CHRISTIAN

On the next sheet occurs the following, in the handwriting of William Russell:

MY DEAR SIR:

I just Recd. this letter of yours and one of my own. It seems Captain Morgan of the Shawanees is sent up for us, to guard out to the Shawanees Towns upon Business of Importance, therefore request your goodness to meet me on Sunday next at Mr. Souths about Night in order to go together to McGavocks against Tuesday next to a meeting of the Committee either to Proceed from there or to return by my House, if so, you can return Home (mutilated) I start, I am Dear Sir.

Your most obedt Humble

Servt

W. RUSSELL

Tuesday the 27th, 1775.

To Mr. Isaac Shelbey Holston.

When Daniel Boone and his friend, Captain William Russell, the leading pioneer in the Clinch Valley, at the head of a party of emigrants, attempted their settlement of Kentucky in

1773, they were driven back by the Indians on September 25, and abandoned the enterprise. For years, in fact since 1764, Daniel Boone had been making exploring expeditions to the westward in the interest of the land company known as Richard Henderson and Company.<sup>22</sup> Another explorer for Richard Henderson, who later made hunting tours and explorations in Kentucky, was Henry Skaggs, who as early as 1765 examined the lower Cumberland region as the representative of Richard Henderson and Company and established his station near the present site of Goodlettsville, in Davidson County, Tennessee.<sup>23</sup> With the Western country thoroughly disturbed and infested with bands of hostile red men, during 1773 and 1774, Col. Henderson recognized the signal unwisdom of attempting a western settlement on an extended scale. It was Daniel Boone's impatience to reach the West and his determination to settle there, regardless of legal right and without securing the title by purchase from the Cherokees, which led to his disastrous setback at Walden's Ridge in 1773. This entire episode exposes Boone's inefficiency as an executive and his inability to carry through plans made on a large scale. It was not until the remarkable legal mind of Judge Henderson and his rare executive ability were applied to the vast and complex project of western colonization that it was carried through to a successful termination.

Two momentous circumstances now intervened to make possible the great western venture, upon which Judge Henderson, during a decade and more, had staked all his hopes. Correspondence with the highest legal authorities in England assured Judge Henderson that despite the Royal Proclamation in 1763 he would be entirely within his rights, as a British subject, to purchase the western lands from the Cherokees and secure authentic title thereto. The victory of the backwoodsmen over the red men at the Battle of the Great Kana-

---

<sup>22</sup>Compare the author's *The Creative Forces in Westward Expansion: Henderson and Boone*, in the *American Historical Review*, October, 1914.

<sup>23</sup>Albright's *Early History of Middle Tennessee*, Nashville, 1909, p. 23.

wha greatly reduced the dangers incident to a visit to the Kentucky wilderness, and in 1775 warranted the bold venture which, in 1773, Boone, upon his own responsibility alone, had found so disastrous. Following the Battle of the Great Kanawha, Judge Henderson, accompanied by his friend and neighbor, Colonel Nathaniel Hart, visited the Indians at their towns and, upon inquiry, learned that the Cherokees were disposed to sell their claims to the Kentucky territory. The agreement was made to meet the entire tribe of the Cherokees in Treaty Council at the Sycamore Shoals, on Watauga River, early in the next year. On their return to the settlements Judge Henderson and Colonel Hart were accompanied by the Little Carpenter, a wise old Indian Chief, and a young buck and his squaw, as delegates to see that proper goods were purchased for the proposed barter. These goods were purchased in December, 1774, at Cross Creek, near Fayetteville, North Carolina, and forwarded by wagons to Watauga.

Since his repulse at Walden's Ridge, in September, 1773, when the sons of both Russell and himself had been slaughtered by Indians, Boone, together with his family, had been residing in a cabin upon the farm of Captain David Gass, seven or eight miles from Russell's, upon Clinch River. He was now summoned to Watauga, instructed to collect the entire tribe of Cherokee Indians and bring them in to the treaty ground. The news of the purposes of the Transylvania Company became public property when Judge Henderson and his associates, in January, 1775, issued their "Proposals for the Settlement of Western Lands," which, in the form of broadsides, were distributed widely along the fringe of settlements upon the Indian border line. News of the proposed treaty quickly reached young Isaac Shelby at Fort Blair; and his pioneering instinct unerringly drew him to the focus of interest, the treaty ground. We are fortunate in having handed down to us, from that early time, a description of the treaty on the part of the young Isaac Shelby, who was an eye-witness. Following the confiscation of the Transylvania Company's claims by the State of Virginia, a series of extended investiga-

tions in regard to the Treaty of Sycamore Shoals were made by order of the Virginia Legislature. The points that were in great need of being settled were: First, whether the deponents were financially interested in lands under the Transylvania Company; second, whether the treaty was conducted with entire fairness; and third, whether the deeds taken by the Transylvania Company were identical, in regard to the metes and bounds of the territory purchased, with the verbal statement of the negotiators of the treaty, made to the Cherokees. As it was subsequently proven, as a result of the investigations of the Virginia Commissioners, that the treaty was conducted with scrupulous fairness by Judge Henderson and his partners, it is interesting to read the following extract from the deposition sworn to on December 3, 1777, before Edmund Randolph and Jo. Prentiss, by Isaac Shelby:

“That in March, 1775, this Deponent was present at a Treaty held at Wattaugha between the said Henderson and the Cherokee Indians: that the deponent then heard the said Henderson call the Indians, when the deed by which the said Henderson now claims was going to be signed, and declared that they would attend to what was going to be done: that the deponent believes the courses in the said Deed contained, to be the very courses which the said Henderson read therefrom to the Indians and were interpreted to them. That the said Henderson took the said Deed from among several others lying on a table, all of which appeared to the Deponent to be of the same tenor with that which he read—That at the time of this Treaty, one Read who was there and suspected that the said Henderson intended to purchase some lands which he himself had his Eyes on, desired the said Deed to be read before it was signed, which was accordingly done, and the said Read objected not thereto.”

It was doubtless at some time during the course of the treaty—a treaty universally conceded to have been unparalleled for honesty and fair dealing with the Indians on the part of the whites—that Judge Henderson, attracted by the sterling qualities of the young Shelby and by his manifest



eagerness to connect himself with Henderson's plans of colonization, secured the promise of his services in the future, following the expiration of his term of enlistment, as surveyor for the Transylvania Company. The garrison of Fort Blair was not disbanded until July, 1775; and immediately Shelby journeyed to Kentucky and engaged in the business of land surveyor for the proprietors of the Transylvania Company, who had established a regular land office as the result of their purchase of the Kentucky area from the Cherokees. Here he remained for nearly twelve months, surveying numerous tracts of land for the Transylvania proprietors, and likewise making a number of entries of land for himself in Judge Henderson's land office.<sup>24</sup> His health finally became impaired, owing to continued exposure to wet and cold, combined with the frequent necessity for going without either bread or salt. On this account he was compelled to return to the settlements on Holston.

In July, 1776, during his absence in Kentucky, Shelby was appointed Captain of a minute company by the Committee of Safety in Virginia. As described by Shelby this was "a species of troops organized for the first emergency of the War of the Revolution, which, however, was not called into actual service from the extreme frontier on which he (Shelby) lived." On December 6th of this year, the General Assembly of Virginia passed an act dividing the county of Fincastle into three distinct counties, to-wit: Montgomery, Washington, and Kentucky. In this act the bounds of Washington County were defined as follows:

"That all that part of said county of Fincastle included in the lines beginning at the Cumberland Mountains where the line of Kentucky county intersects the North Carolina (now Tennessee) line; thence to the east along the said Carolina line to the top of Iron mountain; thence along the same east-

---

<sup>24</sup>In his deposition, referred to above, Isaac Shelby stated: "This Deponent has made several Entries for lands in Mr. Henderson's Office, but does not conceive himself to be in any manner interested in the Event of the dispute, between the Commonwealth of Virginia and the said Henderson." *Cal. Va. State Papers*, I, 296-7.



erly to the source of the South Fork of the Holston river; thence northwardly along the highest part of the highlands, ridges, and mountains that divide the waters of the Tennessee from those of the Great Kanawha to the most easterly source of Clinch River; thence westwardly along the top of the mountain that divides the waters of the Clinch river from those of the Great Kanawha and Sandy Creek to the line of Kentucky county and thence along the same to the beginning, shall be one other distinct county and called and known by the name of Washington."

The eastern boundary of Washington County as thus defined was altered by Act of the General Assembly at its session in the month of May, 1777, as follows:

"Beginning at a ford on Holston river, next above Captain John Campbells, at the Royal Oak, and running from thence a due south course to the dividing line between the States of Virginia and North Carolina; and from the ford aforesaid to the westerly end of Morris's Knob, about three miles above Maiden Spring on Clinch, and from thence, by a line to be drawn due north, until it shall intersect the waters of the Great Sandy river."<sup>25</sup>

The officers of the county commissioned by Governor Patrick Henry on the 21st day of December, 1776, were as follows: James Dysart, sheriff; Arthur Campbell, county lieutenant; Evan Shelby, Colonel; William Campbell, lieutenant-colonel; and Daniel Smith, Major. Among the names of those on the same day commissioned justices of the peace was that of Evan Shelby. The first court assembled at Black's Fort (now Abingdon) on the last Tuesday in January, 1777. On the second day of the court, being the 29th of January, Isaac Shelby was recommended, with others, to be added to the Commission of Peace for the county, and was accordingly commissioned. It may be interesting to record that, when, on February 26, 1777, the court recommended to the Governor of Virginia the militia officers for Washington County, both

---

<sup>25</sup>Hening's *Statutes*, 1776.

John Shelby, Sr., and James Shelby were duly commissioned with the rank of Captain. During some portion of this time Isaac Shelby was busily engaged in acting as commissary of supplies, a post to which he was appointed by Governor Henry, for a large body of militia posted at several garrisons for the purpose of guarding the back settlements. Of his activity we have evidence in the great distances which he travelled. For instance, in September of this year, we find him at Harrodsburgh, in Kentucky, swapping horses with the future brilliant and meteoric figure, the conqueror of the Northwest. In Clark's diary one finds the following terse entry:

"Harrodsburgh, September 29.—Bought a horse, price £12; swapped with I. Shelby, boot £10."

I have often wondered who got the "boot"—the phlegmatic Welshman or the mercurial Virginian!

During this same year, Isaac Shelby was likewise instructed to lay in supplies for a grand treaty, to be held at the Long Island of Holston River, in June and July, with the tribe of Cherokee Indians.

"These supplies could not possibly be obtained nearer than Staunton, a distance of near three hundred miles," says Shelby, writing in the third person, "but by the most indefatigable perseverance (one of the most prominent traits in his character) he accomplished it to the satisfaction of his country."

It is necessary for us to recall that in 1772 Colonel John Donelson, of Pittsylvania County, acting as commissioner for Virginia, had established with the Cherokees the western boundary line of that colony, viz: a course running in a direct line from a point six miles east of the Holston River toward the mouth of the Great Kanawha River, until the line struck the Kentucky River, and thence along that river to its junction with the Ohio.<sup>26</sup>

---

<sup>26</sup>A price was agreed upon and promised, but not then paid, for the large section of Kentucky north and east of the Kentucky river thus alienated to Virginia. Considerable doubt still prevails as to whether the price promised by Donelson was ever paid over to the Cherokees.

In 1777 Governor Henry, of Virginia, notified Governor Caswell, of North Carolina, of a treaty to be had with the Cherokees. The object of Virginia was to alter the boundary line as run by Colonel Donelson, and to have the road to and through the Cumberland Gap, the gateway to Kentucky, included in the cession. The commissioners chosen to represent Virginia were Col. William Preston, Col. Evan Shelby, and Col. William Christian, or any two of them. The commissioners chosen to represent North Carolina were Col. Waightstill Avery, Col. William Sharpe, Col. Robert Lanier, and Colonel Joseph Winston. The treaty lasted from the 26th of June until the 20th of July, when it was concluded to the satisfaction of both Virginia and North Carolina. The line established by Donelson in 1772 was not materially altered; but the alteration involved the lands claimed by the Transylvania Company under their purchase from the Cherokees in March, 1775. For reasons of policy and because of lack of instructions from their respective governments the commissioners refused to take account of the memorial presented by Judge Henderson and his associates. The treacherous and wily Indian Chiefs characteristically sought to convince the commissioners that Judge Henderson had treated them hardly in maintaining the provisions of the "Great Treaty" of 1775; but the deposition of Isaac Shelby (already quoted from in part) is conclusive on the point:

"That being present at the late Treaty at Long Island, this deponent remembers to have heard Occunostoto or the Tassel (but which he does not recollect) say that ever since he had signed the paper to Mr. Henderson, he was afraid to sign one, and that Mr. Henderson ever since he had signed the Paper, deprived him of the privilege of catching even Craw fish on the land. That this deponent was present at the time of signing the said Deed at Wattaugha, when everything was conducted fairly on the part of the said Henderson, who after signing, desired the Indians to go and take the goods which he designed for them."<sup>27</sup>

<sup>27</sup>*Cal. Va. State Papers*, I.

This was a memorable gathering of the leading pioneer figures of the day. Revolution was the burning topic of discussion, and the spirit of independence, so long held in leash, found universal expression. In the characteristic phraseology of the patriotic Putnam:

"Here were Robertson and Sevier, Boone and Bledsoe, Shelby, Henderson, Hart and others—all men of worth, of nerve, of enterprise—men who feared God, but obeyed no earthly king."

"They talked freely of the Declaration of Independence, as it had been announced at Mecklenburg, in North Carolina, by Patrick Henry and the Virginians, and by the Continental Congress just twelve months before. They did not think of giving notoriety out there to the Fourth of July; but they all heartily concurred in the renunciation of allegiance to the King of Great Britain, and in the resolution to make 'these States free and independent.'"<sup>28</sup>

In 1778, as we learn from Shelby's account, he was still engaged in the commissary department to provide supplies for the Continental Army, and also for a formidable expedition by the way of Pittsburg against the Northwestern Indians. This was the expedition of General McIntosh against the Ohio Indians. On Dec. 12, 1778, the Virginia Council issued instructions to John Montgomery "to put on Foot the recruiting of men to reinforce Colo. Clarke at the Illinois and to push it on with all possible expedition."<sup>29</sup>

George Rogers Clark was in desperate straits for men and supplies in view of the fact that General McIntosh's proposed expedition from Fort Pitt against Detroit had to be abandoned. John Montgomery was given a very free hand in recruiting for Clark; and the following entry shows to what extent Isaac Shelby was relied upon to fit out with supplies various expeditions along the frontier:

As soon as the state of Affairs in the recruiting business will permit you are to go to the Illinois Country and join Colo Clarke. I need

<sup>28</sup>*History of Middle Tennessee*, 617.

<sup>29</sup>*Clarke's Mss.*, Va. State Archives.

not tell you how necessary the greatest possible dispatch is to the good of the service in which you are engaged Our party at Illinois may be lost together with the present favorable disposition of the French & Indians there unless every moment is improved for their preservation & no future opportunity if the present is lost can ever be expected so favorable to the interest of the Commonwealth. I therefore urge it on you to exert yourself to the utmost to lose not a moment to forward the great work you have in hand & to conquer every difficulty in your way arising from inclement season, great distances, want of many necessities, opposition from enemies & others I cant enumerate but must confide in your virtue to guard against and surmount. Capt Isaac Shelby it is desired may purchase the boats but if he cant do it you must get some other person

You receive 10000 £ Cash for Col: Clarke's corps which you are to deliver him except 200 £ for Capt Shelby to build the boats & what other incidental expences happen necessarily on your way which are to come out of that Sum.

I am &c.

A. BLAIR C C30

In the beginning of the year 1779 Isaac Shelby was appointed by Governor Henry of Virginia to furnish supplies for a strong campaign against the Chickamauga Indians. Owing to the poverty of the treasury, not one cent could be advanced by the government and the whole expense of the supplies and the transportation was sustained by his own individual credit. In the spring of that year he was elected a member of the Virginia Legislature from Washington County, for at that time it was supposed his residence was within the chartered limits of North Carolina.

Following the Treaty of Long Island in 1777, already spoken of, it was apparent to the Commissioners from North Carolina that the settlements, having projected so far westward of the point to which the dividing line had been run, it was highly desirable that the line be extended. In a letter from Waightstill Avery and William Sharpe, to Governor Caswell, August 7, 1777, they express the conviction that "the extension of the line between the two States is now become an object worthy the immediate attention of government—it would be the means of preventing many great dis-

---

<sup>30</sup>*Clark Papers*, 83.



putes."<sup>31</sup> In 1778 the Assembly of Virginia and, a little later, the Assembly of North Carolina, passed similar acts for extending and marking the boundary. The acting Commissioners for North Carolina were Col. Richard Henderson, his cousin, Col. John Williams, of Granville County, and Captain William Bailey Smith. The Commissioners representing Virginia were Dr. Thomas Walker, who had made the remarkable exploration of Kentucky in 1750, and Daniel Smith, the map maker, who was afterwards promoted for his services along the Cumberland. The task of running the boundary line was regarded as a dangerous one, on account of the hostile intentions of the Indians; and each state commissioned a detachment to guard the Commissioners while they were engaged in the arduous enterprise. The Virginia Commission was provided with a military escort of twenty-five men, under the command of Isaac Shelby, commissioned a Major for that purpose by Governor Jefferson.<sup>32</sup> As the result of the extension of the boundary line, the county of Sullivan was erected, and Isaac Shelby, who had recently served in the Virginia Legislature and received a military commission from Governor Jefferson, was appointed Colonel Commandant of this new county of Sullivan.

In 1779 a court of commissioners with plenary powers was created by the commonwealth of Virginia to adjudicate without appeal upon the incipient land titles of the country. William Fleming, Edmund Lyne, James Barbour, and Stephen Trigg, citizens of Virginia but not of the county of Kentucky, were appointed as commissioners. This court had alternate sessions at St. Asaph, Harrodsburg, Boonesborough, the Falls of the Ohio, and Bryan's Station. The court was opened at St. Asaph on October 13, 1779; and at Harrodsburg on February 26, 1780, the court announced that its

---

<sup>31</sup>*State Records of North Carolina*, vol. II, pp. 567-8. Cf. also Summers *S. W. Virginia*, pp. 695-6.

<sup>32</sup>Cf. *Journal of Daniel Smith*, edited by St. George L. Sioussat, *Tennessee Historical Magazine*, March, 1915; *Kentucky-Tennessee Boundary Line*, by J. Stoddart Johnston, *Register Ky. State Hist'l. Soc'y.* Sept., 1908.



powers had elapsed and accordingly adjourned *sine die*. Thousands of claims, of various kinds, were granted by the court during its existence. It was quite fitting, and in itself an event worthy of commemoration, that the first claim presented for adjudication was that of Isaac Shelby, among the first on the ground as surveyor under Henderson and Company, and later to become the first governor of the Commonwealth of Kentucky. The entry was as follows:

"Captain John Logan for and in behalf of Isaac Shelby this day produced a claim, and making a Crop of Corn for the same in the year 1778 Lying on a branch that heads at the Knob Lick & about a mile and a half or two Miles from the said Lick a southeasterly course, proof being made satisfactory to the court they are of Opinion that the said Shelby has a right to a settlement & Preemption according to law and that certificates issue for the same."<sup>33</sup>

The amount of land thus granted was fourteen hundred acres; prior to this time it would seem, Isaac Shelby had perfected no claims for western lands. It is worthy of note that in his deposition before Edmund Randolph and Jo. Prentiss, on December 3, 1777, regarding the Transylvania lands, Isaac Shelby states he had "made several entries for lands in Mr. Henderson's office, but does not consider himself to be in any manner interested in the Event of the dispute, between the Commonwealth of Virginia and the said Henderson."<sup>34</sup> This place, Knob Lick, in what is now Lincoln County, Kentucky, was settled in 1776 by Isaac Shelby while a surveyor under Henderson and Company. In the early spring of 1783, it may be remarked in passing, Shelby built his house upon the very spot where he had camped in 1776, on the tract of land he had preëmpted, and upon which he planted a crop of corn, which he left to be cultivated by a tenant, when he himself went to Williamsburg, then the Capital of Virginia, for his appointment by Governor Patrick Henry as a Captain

---

<sup>33</sup>For this copy I am indebted to Judge Samuel M. Wilson, of Lexington, Ky.

<sup>34</sup>*Cal. Va. State Papers*, I, pp. 296-7.

of the Provisional Army.<sup>35</sup> Upon this preëmption in August, 1786, Governor Shelby built the first stone house ever erected in Kentucky. This was the famous residence known as "Traveler's Rest." It is recorded that the late Col. Nathaniel Hart, of Woodford County, used to say that when it was reported that Col. Shelby had found stone suitable for building purposes, he received many letters from various portions of the United States inquiring if it could possibly be there; as well as many visits to verify the fact, some from as great a distance as Mason County. The real scarcity of stone then seems almost incredible now—in view of the unlimited supply visible on all sides; but was doubtless due to the luxurious growth of cane, and to the heavy foliage which so thoroughly covered the ground when it fell.<sup>36</sup>

During the summer of 1780, while he was locating and securing his claims made under the Transylvania Company, Shelby with his company spent some time among the Northwestern Indians—Piankeshaws, Pottawattamies, and Miamis. In his *Memoir*, George Rogers Clark makes the following amusing entry:

"The ensuing summer (1780), Captain I. Shelby, with his own company only, lay for a considerable time in the heart of their (the Indians') country, and was treated in the most friendly manner by all the natives that he saw, and was frequently invited by them to join and plunder what was called 'the King's Pasture at Detroit.' What they meant was to go and steal horses from that settlement."<sup>37</sup>

What a lark that would have been for the staid and phlegmatic Shelby!

While still in Kentucky, in the summer of 1780, Shelby received intelligence (June 16) of the surrender of Charleston and the loss of the army. He made haste to return home (the first part of July), as he himself says, "determined to enter the service of his country, until her independence was

---

<sup>35</sup>Draper's *Kings Mountain*, 412; Shelby's *Autobiography*.

<sup>36</sup>Collins' *History of Kentucky* (1882), i, 514.

<sup>37</sup>English's *Conquest of the Northwest*, I, 549.

secured; for he could not remain a cool spectator of a conquest in which his dearest rights and interests were at stake." The story of the events which immediately succeeded this determination is best told in his own words:

"On his arrival in Sullivan he joined a requisition from General Charles McDowell, ordering him to furnish all the aid in his power, to assist in giving a check to the enemy, who had overrun the two Southern States and were then on the border of North Carolina. Col. Shelby assembled the Militia of his County, called upon them to volunteer their services for a short period on that interesting occasion, and marched in a very few days with near two hundred mounted riflemen across the Alleghany Mountain.

"Shortly after his arrival at McDowell's camp the army moved to near the Cherokee Ford of Broad River, from whence Col. Shelby and Lieut. Col. Clark of Georgia were detached with five hundred mounted men<sup>38</sup> to attack a British Fort, about twenty miles to the South, which was garrisoned principally by Loyalists. Col. Shelby left McDowell's camp late in the evening and arrived at the enemies Post just after daylight the next morning<sup>39</sup> which he found to be enclosed by a strong Abbatus (abatis), and everything within, indicating resistance. He however made a peremptory demand of a surrender, when Capt. Patrick Moor, who commanded returned for answer that he would defend the Post to the last extremity.<sup>40</sup> Our lines were then drawn to within a distance of about two hundred yards around the Garrison, with a determination to storm it. He however sent a messenger a second time to demand a surrender before he would proceed to extremities. To this the enemy agreed to give up the Post, on their being Paroled not to serve again during the war; or until they were regularly exchanged. In it were found ninety-

---

<sup>38</sup>Shelby's figures are never conspicuous for accuracy. The detachment in this instance consisted of some six hundred horsemen.

<sup>39</sup>Sunday, July 30. Cf. Allaire's Diary.

<sup>40</sup>The person sent in to demand the surrender of the post was Captain William Cocke, who made the daring ride for Col. Richard Henderson in April, 1775.

two Loyalists, with one British subbolten (subaltern) officer left there to discipline them, also two hundred and fifty stand of arms, well charged with ball and buckshot and well disposed of at the different port holes. This was a strong post built for defense in the Cherokee war of '76 and stood on a branch of a small river called Pacolet.

“Shortly after this affair and his return to McDowell’s camp Shelby and Clark were again detached with six hundred mounted men to watch the movements of the Enemy, and if possible to cut up his foraging parties. Ferguson who commanded the Enemy about two thousand five hundred strong,<sup>41</sup> composed of British and Tories, with a small squadron of British Horse, was an officer of great enterprise and although only a Major in the British line, was a Brigadier General in the royal militia establishment made by the enemy after he had overrun South Carolina, and esteemed the most distinguished partisan officer belonging to the British army. He made several attempts to surprise Col. Shelby, but his designs were always baffled. On the first<sup>42</sup> of August however, his advance, about six or seven hundred strong, came up with the American Commander at a place he had chosen to fight him, called Cedar Spring; when a sharp conflict ensued which lasted about half an hour; when Ferguson came up with his whole force. The Americans then retreated, carrying off the field of battle about twenty prisoners and two British Subalterns.<sup>43</sup> Their killed was not ascertained. The Americans lost eight killed and upwards of thirty wounded, mostly with the sabre officers. The Enemy made great efforts for several miles to regain the prisoners, but by forming frequently on advantageous ground apparently to give them battle the enemy were retarded in their pursuit, so that the prisoners were pushed out of their reach. General McDowell

---

<sup>41</sup>Shelby’s original statement in Haywood’s *Tennessee* is that the enemy numbered about two thousand; it may have been as small a number as eighteen hundred.

<sup>42</sup>The date is correctly given in Allaire’s *Diary* as August eighth.

<sup>43</sup>In Todd’s *Memoir* of Shelby the number of prisoners taken is increased from twenty to fifty.

having by some means got information that a party from four to six hundred Loyalists were encamped near Musgrove's Mill, on the South Side of the Enoree River, about forty miles distant; he again detached Col. Shelby, Williams and Clark with about seven hundred horsemen,<sup>44</sup> to surprise and disperse them. Ferguson with his whole force was encamped at that time on their most direct route. The American commanders took up their line of march from Smith's Ford on Broad river (where McDowell's army was then encamped) just at sundown on the evening of the 18th<sup>45</sup> August 1780—marched through the woods till after dark, and then took a road leaving Ferguson's camp about three miles to the left. They rode very hard all night, the greatest part of the way in a fast travelling gait, and just at the dawn of day, about half a mile from the Enemy's camp, met a strong patrol party, a short skirmish ensued, and several of them were killed. At that juncture a countryman living immediately at the spot, came up and informed, that the enemy had been reinforced the evening before, with six hundred regular troops (the Queens American regiment from New York) under Col. Ennes, destined to reinforce Ferguson's army; and the circumstances attending this information were so minute and particular, that no doubt was entertained of its truth although the man was a Tory.<sup>46</sup> To march on and attack the enemy then seemed improper. To attempt an escape from the enemy in the rear appeared improbable, broke down as were the Americans and their horses; for it was well known to them that the enemy could mount six or seven hundred infantry with horses of the Loyalists. They instantly determined to

---

<sup>44</sup>It is probable that the American forces numbered only from two hundred and fifty to three hundred and fifty. Probably the British originally numbered approximately six hundred.

<sup>45</sup>The weight of authority favors the seventeenth, the battle occurring on the eighteenth.

<sup>46</sup>It is probable that this statement with respect to the number of British was a considerable exaggeration. Gov. Abner Nash, writing Sept. 10, 1780, gives Williams' force as two hundred and the British as four hundred. The name of the commander of the British reinforcement was Innes, not Ennes.



form a breastwork of old logs and brush near the spot, and make the best defense in their power; for by this time the drums and bugle horns of the enemy were distinctly heard in their camp on the high ground across the river, and soon indicated their movements. Captain Inman was sent with twenty-five men, to meet the enemy and skirmish with them, so soon as they crossed the Enoree River. Capt. Inman was ordered to fire on them, and retreat according to his own discretion. This strategem (which was the suggestion of the Capt. himself) drew the enemy forward in disorder, believing they had driven our whole party; and when they came up within seventy yards a most destructive fire commenced from our Riflemen who lay concealed behind their breastwork of pine logs and brush, which was near half a mile long.<sup>47</sup> It was one whole hour before the enemy could force our Riflemen from their slender breastwork. Just as they began to give way in some parts, Col. Ennes was badly wounded; and all the other British officers except one being previously killed or wounded; and Capt. Hawsey a considerable leader among the Loyalists being shot down; the whole of the enemy's line began to give way, the Americans pursued them close, and beat them across the river with slaughter.<sup>48</sup> In this pursuit Capt. Inman was killed bravely fighting the enemy hand to hand. In this action Col. Shelby commanded the right wing, Clark the left and Williams the center. The Americans returned to their horses and mounted with a determination to be in Ninety-Six (at that time a weak British Post) before night; it being less than thirty miles distant according to information then received. At that moment an express from Gen'l McDowell (one Francis Jones) came up in great haste with a short letter in his hand from Governor Caswell, dated on the battle ground near Camden apprising McDowell of

---

<sup>47</sup>The Americans had been cautioned to reserve their fire "till they could see the buttons on the enemies' clothes."

<sup>48</sup>William Smith of Watauga, whose bullet had struck down Innes, exultantly exclaimed: "I've killed their commander," whereupon Shelby "rallied his men who raised a regular frontier Indian yell and rushed furiously upon the enemy, who were gradually forced back before the exasperated riflemen." Cf. Draper's *Kings Mountain*, 108.

the defeat of the American grand army under Gen'l Gates, on the 16th near that place, advising him to get out of the way, for that army would no doubt endeavor to improve their victory to the greatest advantage by cutting up all the small corps of the American armies within their reach. It was fortunate that Col. Shelby had some knowledge of Governor Caswell's handwriting and knew what reliance to place upon it; but how to avoid the enemy in his rear, broke down with fatigue as his men and horses were, with upwards of two hundred prisoners (mostly British) taken in the action—was a difficult task. The loss in killed of the enemy was not ascertained owing to the sudden manner in which the Americans were obliged to leave the battle ground, but must have been very great, from the incessant fire that was poured upon them by our Riflemen for considerably more than an hour. Our loss did not exceed nine or ten, as the enemy generally overshot the breastwork.<sup>49</sup> The prisoners were distributed amongst the companies, so as to make about one to every three men, who carried them alternately on horseback directly towards the mountains. We continued our march all that day, the night following and the next day until late in the evening, without ever stopping to refresh.<sup>50</sup> This long and rapid retreat saved the Americans, for it is a fact that, De Peyster second in command of Ferguson's army, pursued them with seven hundred mounted men to the place where they had foraged and refreshed themselves in the evening of the second day after the action; and having arrived there half an hour after our departure, at dusk, so broke down by excessive fatigue in hot weather, he gave up the chase.<sup>51</sup> Having seen the party and

---

<sup>49</sup>Draper says: "four killed and eight or nine wounded." The British loss, according to the same authority, was eighty-three killed, about ninety wounded, and seventy prisoners—a total of two hundred and twenty-three out of between four hundred to five hundred—an unusually high percentage of loss.

<sup>50</sup>This is an admirable illustration of the indomitable persistence and strenuous energy of Shelby.

<sup>51</sup>Note B at end of Shelby's Ms. is as follows: "This information Col. Shelby received from De Peyster himself after he was captured at Kings Mountain in October following." Draper pronounces this an error on the authority of Fanning, the Tory annalist, who asserts that on the night after the battle De Peyster accompanied him from Musgrove's Mill to Ninety Six.

the prisoners out of all danger Col. Shelby retreated over the Western waters with his followers, and left the prisoners with Clark and Williams to carry them on to some place of safety in Virginia. So great was the panic after Gen'l Gates' defeat, and Gen. Sumpter's disaster, that McDowell's whole army broke. Some retreated west of the mountains, and others went to the North. This action which lasted one hour and a half and fought so shortly after the defeat of our grand army, is scarcely known in the history of the Revolution.<sup>52</sup> Ferguson too, made a hard push with his main army to intercept and retake the prisoners before they could reach the mountains, but finding his efforts vain, he took post at a place called Gilbert Town."

News of the disastrous reverse to General Gates and the American army at Camden, on August 16, 1780, and of the defeat of General Sumter which followed shortly afterwards, produced the immediate effect of spreading universal consternation and alarm. The various bodies of Whig Militia were forced to scatter in all directions. From his post at Gilbert Town, Ferguson paroled a prisoner, one Samuel Philips, a distant relation of Isaac Shelby's, and "instructed him to inform the officers on the Western waters, that if they did not desist from their opposition to the British arms, and take protection under his standard, he would march his army over the mountains, and lay their army waste with fire and sword."<sup>53</sup> Immediately following the affair at Musgrove's Mill, Shelby, with the approbation of Major Robertson, had proposed that an army of volunteers be raised on both sides of the mountains for the purpose of resisting Ferguson's advance. At the time the consensus of opinion heartily favored Shelby's proposal. As soon as Shelby received Ferguson's threatening

---

<sup>52</sup>Shelby elsewhere describes the battle as "the hardest and best fought action he ever was in"—attributing this valor and persistency to "the great number of officers who were with him as volunteers."

<sup>53</sup>General Joseph Graham's account in *General Joseph Graham and His Revolutionary Papers*, by W. A. Graham, 1904. This account originally appeared in the *Southern Literary Messenger*, September, 1845. Compare, also, Draper's *Kings Mountain*, p. 169.

and insulting message, he set in train a course of events which were the reverse of the result aimed at by Ferguson. The letter instead of having a deterrent and intimidating effect upon Shelby, only fired to immediate execution the determination which he had already reached to arouse the fierce mountain men to action. Without delay, Shelby rode off about forty miles to see John Sevier, the efficient commander of the militia of Washington County, at his home near Jonesborough. Here, after his ride in feverish haste, he found Sevier in the midst of great festivities—a horse race was in progress, and the people in crowds were in attendance at the barbecue. Angered by the insolent taunt of Ferguson, Shelby vehemently declared that this was a time, not for a frolic, but for a fight. Sevier, the daring and adventurous, eagerly seconded Shelby's proposal to arouse the mountain men, to coöperate with other forces that might be raised, and to make an effort to attack, by surprise, and to defeat Ferguson in his camp; if this were not practicable, to unite with any corps of patriots with which they might meet and wage war against the enemies of America; and in the event of failure, with the consequent desolation of their homes, to take water, float down the Holston, Tennessee, Ohio, and Mississippi rivers and find a home with the Spaniards in Louisiana.<sup>54</sup> For two days Shelby remained in consultation with Sevier; the Sycamore Shoals of the Watauga was agreed upon as the rendezvous for their forces, and the time of meeting the twenty-fifth of September. A small force of one hundred and sixty men, under Colonel Charles McDowell and Colonel Andrew Hampton, driven before the enemy, had encamped at Watauga on September 18th; and their "doleful tale," as Col. Arthur Campbell expressed it, still further "tended to excite the resentment of the western militia." Sevier undertook to bring this force into the movement; and Isaac Shelby sent his brother Moses, who held the rank of Captain, with a message to Colonel William Campbell, of the neighboring county of Washington,

---

<sup>54</sup>*Life of General John Sevier*, by F. M. Turner; pp. 108-9. Draper's *Kings Mountain*, p. 170.

urgently requesting his coöperation. Campbell had other plans on foot; but upon the receipt of a second and more urgent message from Shelby, he acquiesced in the latter's plan for the attack on Ferguson. Shelby likewise despatched a messenger, a Mr. Adair, to the County Lieutenant of Washington County, Colonel Arthur Campbell, the cousin and brother-in-law of William Campbell, requesting his coöperation. Arthur Campbell had just returned from a conference with Governor Jefferson, and was in a mood to act, as the Governor had pressed upon him the need for a more vigorous resistance to the enemy. Campbell sent word back that "if the western counties of North Carolina could raise a force to join Col. McDowell's men, that the officers of Washington County would coöperate."<sup>55</sup>

---

<sup>55</sup>*Kings Mountain—A Fragment*, by Col. Arthur Campbell.



## The Old Cemetery, Charlotte, N. C.

### Some Unusual Notations Concerning this Ancient Burial Place, which Holds the Dust of Many Patriots of Fame in North Carolina

---

By VIOLET G. ALEXANDER.

---

A complete record of this ancient burial ground is not existent today, but it is known to be one of the oldest graveyards in North Carolina, guarding in its bosom the dust of many patriots, men and women, with their little children, once prominent in the life of the county and the State.

It has been called "the graveyard of the Presbyterian church" (Hunter's *Sketches of Western North Carolina*, pages 50-59) and there is probably a reason for this title, for in the early days of this community, what is today the *First* Presbyterian Church was the only church in Charlotte, and was built for *all* denominations; but at that date the Presbyterian denomination was the only one in evidence, so after some years of so-called "general use" the Presbyterians paid a small debt of \$1,500 and took over the church and beautiful oak grove occupying a city square. As was the custom in those early days, a graveyard was laid off adjacent to the church and was used as a common burying ground. This one lies immediately in the rear of the Presbyterian church occupying almost a city square and as it was laid off in connection with the church has frequently been called "the graveyard of the Presbyterian church."

The "Old Cemetery," as it is now more generally called, was the first graveyard in Charlotte, the "Spratt Burying Ground" antedating it some years, was a private one outside the town limits in early days. The "Old Cemetery" was used as the "town" cemetery until a few years prior to the War Between the States, about 1854, the date of the first interment in "Elmwood," the present large city cemetery, when,

on account of its small size and crowded condition, it was closed for burials, and "Elmwood" was opened.

Interments "by special permit" to allow members of families to be buried by those of their name, have taken place as late as during the '70s. One of the last was that of Mrs. Sophie Graham Witherspoon, widow of Dr. John Witherspoon and daughter of General Joseph Graham, a beautiful, gifted, and beloved woman, worthy of her splendid ancestry, who today has a host of relatives in Charlotte to "rise up and call her blessed."

No complete list of those who have been buried here is available, as no record was kept, and the tombs of many have disappeared from age or neglect, but a partial list has been gleaned from the tombstones still standing, which contains the names of the following well-known and honored families: Alexander, Davidson, Graham, Witherspoon, Polk, Irwin, Carson, Orr, Harty, Clayton, Houston, Berryhill, Blair, Caldwell, Dunlap, Watson, Lowrie, Wilson, Gillespie, Elms, Trotter, Ray, Woodruff, Britton, McLelland, Howell, Sloan, Morrow, Cook, Lemmuel, Badger, Sterling, Jones, Owens, Thomas, McRee, Tredinick, Kearney, Caruth, Asbury, Hoskins, Boyd, Springs, Laurey, Meacham, Dixon, McCombs, Edwards, Howie, Wheeler, and Dinkins.

This incomplete list is one of the "honor-rolls" of Mecklenburg County, recording the fair names of some of her bravest sons and loveliest daughters, who in their brief day acted well their part and laid the safe foundation of Church and State which is today the goodly heritage of Charlotte. Lack of space prevents individual mention of many whose names and lives are indelibly linked with North Carolina's history nor are we permitted to quote the quaint epitaphs and inscriptions found on many of the tombstones.

Three men of considerable fame and who stand large in North Carolina history are buried in the "Old Cemetery" and deserve a more extended notice: Governor Nathaniel Alexander, Colonel Thomas Polk, and General George Graham.

Governor Nathaniel Alexander is the only Governor Mecklenburg County has ever had and his last resting place should be guarded with affection and pride, for he was honored and beloved by his contemporaries as is attested by the many positions of trust he filled. Foote, in his *History of Western North Carolina*, page 267, has the following:

“Nathaniel Alexander, late Governor of North Carolina, was a native of Mecklenburg. He was a physician by profession and was elected a member of the House of Commons from Mecklenburg in 1797, a member of the Senate in 1801, and reëlected in 1802. In 1803-1805 he was a member of Congress, and in 1805 elected Governor of the State. He married a daughter of Colonel Thomas Polk. He left no children. He was a man of much personal worth and respectable talents. He died and lies buried in Charlotte.”

Governor Alexander was a son of Colonel Moses Alexander, a distinguished Revolutionary patriot, who also rendered large services to his country. Governor Alexander's wife (Margaret Polk), was also of patriotic blood, a woman of many fine traits and splendid characteristics, as is evidenced by the fact that she was one of that brilliant company of young ladies of Mecklenburg County who drew up and signed the famous patriotic Resolutions and sent them to Salisbury to the Committee in session there representing Rowan and Mecklenburg counties on May 8, 1776. For a full account of this patriotic deed read Hunter's *Sketches of Western North Carolina*, pages 144-145. It would appear from this action of the women of Mecklenburg County in May, 1776—still some months prior to July 4, 1776—that they were fired with the same fearless patriotism which prompted the men of Mecklenburg County to draw up and sign the Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence on the previous May 20, 1775!!

Governor Alexander and his wife are buried in the “Old Cemetery” and we find the following inscriptions on their tombs.

Sacred  
To the Memory of  
Doc'r Nathaniel Alexander  
Late Governor of No. Carolina  
who departed this life on the  
7th day of March 1808  
in the 52nd year of his age.

By his side lies buried his wife, with this inscription on her tomb:

Sacred  
To the Memory of  
Margaret Alexander  
Wife of  
Doctor Alexander  
and daughter of  
Thomas and Susannah Polk  
who departed this life on the  
12th day of Sept. 1806  
in the 42nd year of her age.

Turning now to Colonel Thomas Polk, we again quote from the historian, Foote, pages 5-10, who says: "Col. Thomas Polk and his wife Susanna Spratt Polk, lie buried in the graveyard of the village (Charlotte)." Colonel Polk was one of the ablest and most patriotic men Mecklenburg County—famous for her patriots—has ever borne. He was a member of the Colonial Assembly in 1771 and again in 1775. In 1775 he was Colonel of the Mecklenburg Militia and issued orders to the Captains of the several "beats," or districts, to send two (2) delegates each to the Convention held in Charlotte on its regular day of meeting, May 19, 1775. It was on this day, while the Convention was in session, that the news of the Battle of Lexington (Mass.) reached Charlotte, and the citizens, already aggrieved and incensed, became so indignant that Resolutions were drawn up and signed on May 20, 1775, declaring independence of Great Britain. Colonel Polk was a delegate to the Convention and was one of the signers of the Declaration of Independence and had the honor by right of his official capacity as Colonel of the Militia, of reading the famous document publicly from the courthouse steps to the

assembled citizens. Colonel Polk was appointed Colonel of the Fourth Regiment, Continental Troops by the Provincial Congress at Halifax, N. C., April 4, 1776. After the death of General William Lee Davidson at Cowan's Ford, he was appointed Brigadier-General in his stead. Mrs. Polk was a daughter of Thomas Spratt, one of the earliest settlers of western North Carolina, who was the first man to "cross the Yadkin River on wheels"—vehicles in those primitive days being rare; he was one of the wealthiest and most influential citizens of Mecklenburg and it was at his home where the first court was held prior to the building of the first courthouse. Mrs. Polk's sister, Ann Spratt, was the first white child born in Western North Carolina, and her grave is in the old "Spratt burying ground." Colonel and Mrs. Polk had an interesting family, many of whose descendants are prominent in the life of the community today. Hunter's *Sketches of Western North Carolina*, page 55, tells us that "he (Colonel Polk) died in 1793, full of years and full of honors, and his mortal remains repose in the graveyard of the Presbyterian Church, in Charlotte."

Their son, William Polk, also a distinguished patriot, erected a memorial marble over the last resting place of his parents as a tribute of filial love and esteem. On it we read this beautiful testimony:

Here lies inter'd  
The Earthly remains of  
General Thomas Polk  
and his wife  
Susanna Polk  
who lived many years together  
justly beloved and respected  
for their many virtues  
And universally regretted by all  
who had the pleasure of their  
acquaintance.  
Their Son  
William Polk  
As a token of his filial regard  
hath caused this stone to be  
Erected to their Memory.



Some years ago it was the custom on each 20th of May for a "Special Committee" of citizens to visit the "Old Cemetery" and decorate Colonel Polk's grave with flags and flowers in loving memory of his patriotism as Signer and Public Reader of Mecklenburg's Declaration. Today this loyal tribute has fallen into disuse, but the writer hopes to see it revived and again become an annual custom.

General George Graham is the third distinguished patriot buried in the "Old Cemetery" of whom we shall write. He was one of the most conspicuously brave and daring men North Carolina has ever produced, a man with a notable record for heroism as is strikingly recounted in the remarkable inscription on his tombstone. He was the son of Scotch-Irish parents, James and Mary Graham, and was born in Pennsylvania, December 5, 1752, moving to North Carolina with his widowed mother when about ten years of age. His mother was a woman of strong character and fine patriotism, aiding her countrymen in their struggle for freedom and giving to the cause two sons, General Joseph Graham and General George Graham. She is buried in the "Old Cemetery," near the grave of her son, George. He was one of the students of "Queen's Museum" (afterwards Liberty Hall) and was in *Charlotte* and present at the reading of the Mecklenburg Declaration, on May 20, 1775, as is attested by his affidavit given when he was 61 years of age. In May, 1775, when it was rumored that Captain James Jack, bearer of the Mecklenburg Declaration to the Continental Congress in Philadelphia, was about to be detained in Salisbury by two Tory lawyers, Dunn and Bootles, young George Graham, then about 23 years of age, "was one of the brave spirits who rode all night to Salisbury," seized the offenders and brought them both to Mecklenburg for trial. George Graham took an active part in the campaign against Cornwallis in 1780, and was one of the twelve (12) brave men who dared attack a foraging party of four hundred (400) British soldiers at McIntire's Branch on the Beattie's Ford road, seven miles from Charlotte, compelling them to retreat with a considerable loss of dead and

wounded. Scarcely has a braver or more daring deed been written in the annals of American history !

After the war George Graham was elected Major-General of the North Carolina Militia ; for many years he was Clerk of the Court of Mecklenburg County and he was a member of the House of Representatives during 1793-94-95, and was a member of the State Senate during 1703-04-05-06-07-08-09-10-11-12. Again we quote from Hunter's *Sketches of Western North Carolina*, page 99 :

"He (George Graham) lived more than half a century on his farm two miles from Charlotte. He died on the 29th of March, 1826, in the 68th year of his age, and is buried in the graveyard of the Presbyterian Church in Charlotte."

A more extended and interesting account of George Graham may be found in that valuable contribution to history, the life of his brother Joseph, entitled *General Joseph Graham and His Revolutionary Papers*, written by General Joseph Graham's distinguished grandson, Hon. Wm. A. Graham.

The inscription on George Graham's tombstone is a grateful recognition by his fellow-countrymen of his splendid bravery in times of war and of his sterling qualities in times of peace, a most unusual and striking tribute !

As we stand by his grave we read :

Sacred  
to the  
Memory of  
Major-General George Graham  
who died  
on the 29th of March, 1826  
in the 68th year of his age.

---

He lived more than half a century  
in the vicinity of  
This place and was a zealous and  
active defender of his  
Country's Rights  
in the  
Revolutionary War  
and one of the Gallant Twelve who

dared to attack and actually  
drove 400 British troops  
at McIntire's  
7 miles north of Charlotte  
on the 3rd of October, 1780.  
George Graham filled many high  
and responsible Public Trusts  
the duties of which he discharged  
with fidelity.  
He was the people's friend not their  
flatterer  
and uniformly engaged the  
Unlimited Confidence  
and respect of his  
Fellow Citizens.

The site of the encounter with the British at McIntire's has been marked by a boulder and inscription as a memorial to George Graham and the "Gallant Twelve."

In the north and east corner of the "Old Cemetery" a space was set apart for the burial of the slaves who died in the homes of their masters. Many faithful men and women, with their little children, found sepulture here, near the last resting place of those they had loved and faithfully served, and who in return were held in affection and esteem. No tombstones mark these graves and most of them have disappeared from sight, so today only a rolling greensward greets the eye of the casual passerby, giving no intimation that beneath its turf lie the dust of many of an alien race who had found home and friends in Charlotte.

Strangers and visitors to Charlotte often visit the "Old Cemetery" to search for graves of relatives, or to copy inscriptions, or, from a reverent love of studying at first-hand a people's history, to stroll through its shady walks under its ancient oak trees and read the quaint epitaphs. Unfortunately this historic burial place has not been put in "Perpetual Care," and the city gives only a small appropriation for its upkeep. A fine hedge has been planted around it and a splendid rock wall built on the front side. At its entrance on West Fifth Street we find a beautiful old wrought-iron

gate of historic interest. The iron was mined by John Graham, a son of General Joseph Graham, at one of the General's iron furnaces, "Rehoboth Furnace," in Lincoln County, and was made "by hand" by the slaves and is a beautiful specimen of their work. The gate was owned by various members of the family in succession and has been donated to the "Old Cemetery." This sacred "God's Acre" now lies close to the throbbing heart of the modern "Queen City," and is one of her priceless heritages from her early patriots, who bestowed on her her splendid history which is today her greatest treasure.

## The North Carolina Medical Society of 1799-1804

---

By MARSHALL DELANCEY HAYWOOD.

Author of "Governor William Tryon and His Administration in the Province of North Carolina, 1765-1771," "Lives of the Bishops of North Carolina," "Ballads of Courageous Carolinians," etc.

---

The present splendid organization, known as The Medical Society of the State of North Carolina, had its origin, as many know, in the year 1849; but the fact is known to very few that just half a century earlier a society of almost the same name—THE NORTH CAROLINA MEDICAL SOCIETY—was projected in the city of Raleigh by leaders of the medical profession then residing in the Old North State.

By perusing old files of the *Raleigh Register*, now preserved in the North Carolina State Library, we are able to catch glimpses of the earlier organization and its promoters. In the issue of that paper of November 12, 1799, it is stated that "it is contemplated by several Gentlemen of the Faculty, in the State, to form themselves into a Medical Society, and that they intend to convene for that purpose in this city some time in the month of December." The editor adds: "Such an association of scientific men must be highly useful to themselves and to the community." Commenting still further it is editorially stated that such a society could be made extremely useful "by the interchange of sentiments which it would occasion; by the discussion of medical subjects, which would awaken the spirit of inquiry; by directing the pursuits of the pupil; by giving sanction to the medical skill and ability of candidates for practice; by establishing among the Faculty a friendly intercourse; by enabling the community to distinguish the true Physician from the ignorant Pretender; and by discountenancing, and possibly suppressing the fatal and criminal practices of Quacks and Empyrics."



The term "Faculty," above mentioned, we may add in passing, is not used in the same sense as we now generally understand that word, but is an obsolete term to denote a learned profession or occupation.

In the *Raleigh Register* of December 10, 1799, Dr. Calvin Jones, "Secretary of Correspondence," published notice that the Medical Society would hold its meeting in Raleigh on the 16th of the same month. It is briefly announced in the aforementioned newspaper of December 17th that the "Medical Society met this day [probably meaning the preceding day] when Dr. Hand was appointed to the chair, and the Society proceeded to business."

The State Legislature convened in Raleigh about this time, and legally incorporated The North Carolina Medical Society by Chapter 38 of the Private Laws of 1799.

The list of officers was announced as follows in the *Raleigh Register* of December 24th: Richard Fenner, President; Nat Loomis and J. Clairborne, Vice-Presidents; Sterling Wheaton, James Webb, John J. Pasteur, and Jason Hand, Censors; Calvin Jones, Corresponding Secretary; William B. Hill, Recording Secretary; and Cargill Massenburg, Treasurer. This meeting adjourned, with a resolution that the next annual convention should be held in Raleigh on December 1, 1800. It met at the appointed time, and elected as new members Drs. John C. Osborne, Thomas Mitchel, John Sibley, ———— Armistead, and ———— French. A successful examination before the Censors was passed by Charles Smith. Quite a number of essays was read, and discussions were participated in by many of those present. The State was then divided by the Society into medical districts, and the physicians residing in these districts were urged to hold periodical meetings. Dr. James Webb, of Hillsborough, read a paper on the causes and prevention of gout and rheumatism. Prizes in money were offered by the Society for certain quantities of plants and medicinal articles produced in North Carolina, as follows: fox-glove, opium, rhubarb, castor oil,

and senna. Cholera infantum was fixed upon as the special subject of study for the succeeding annual meeting, and Drs. Pasteur, Wheaton, Loomis, and Hand were appointed essayists for the said forthcoming meeting, to be held in the year following, with liberty to choose the subjects of their dissertations. Before this meeting of 1800 adjourned, officers were elected as follows: John C. Osborne, President; Thomas Mitchel and Richard Fenner, Vice-Presidents; James Webb and John Sibley, Censors; Sterling Wheaton, Recording Secretary; Calvin Jones, Corresponding Secretary; and Cargill Massenburg, Treasurer.

The next annual meeting duly convened in the city of Raleigh on Monday, December 1, 1801, and held a three-day session. The newspaper account says that "a considerable number of respectable Physicians from various parts of the State were present." The president, Dr. Osborne, delivered the opening address which was editorially described in the *Raleigh Register* as "a cursory narrative of the progress of the science of Medicine, from the earliest ages." An "ingenious practical treatise on General Dropsy" was read by Dr. Wheaton. A committee was appointed to take steps towards establishing a botanical garden, for the cultivation of medicinal plants, and it was also resolved to found a medical library. The officers of the preceding year were reelected, with the exception of the fact that Dr. Clairborne succeeded Dr. Sibley as a Censor. The subject of infantile diseases was designated as a special study for the next annual meeting.

In the newspapers of November, 1802, a call for the Society to meet on December 1st, was issued by Dr. Calvin Jones, Corresponding Secretary; but, if the meeting took place, as it probably did, the present writer can find no record of its proceedings.

The annual meeting at Raleigh, on December 3, 1803, brought a new accession of members in the persons of Drs. Robert Williams (of Pitt), John McFarland, John McAden, Elias Hawes, Hugh McCullough, and Thomas Henderson. No change of officers was made except the election of Dr.

Williams as a Censor, *vice* Dr. Clairborne. The details of this meeting are not given in the newspaper report.

The Society met in Raleigh on December 10, 1804, re-elected all officers of the preceding year, with the exception of Treasurer—Dr. Hawes succeeding Dr. Massenburg—and resolved to hold its next meeting in the town of Chapel Hill, the seat of the University of North Carolina, on the 5th of July, 1805. Whether this meeting took place the present writer is unable to say, nor can he find any further record of proceedings of this Society in the old newspaper files or elsewhere.

To illustrate how thoroughly abreast of their time these physicians in the North Carolina Medical Society were, it may be recalled that while Dr. Jenner's experiments, in England, on the subject of vaccination against smallpox were still in progress the North Carolina practitioners were making a study of his dissertations and applying the process to their patients. Jenner's first published treatise on the subject appeared in England in 1798, and his experiments were not completed till several years later. Yet as early as 1800 Dr. Calvin Jones published in the *Raleigh Register* an announcement that soon he hoped to begin the treatment in North Carolina. A long treatise on this subject, from the pen of Dr. Jones will be found in the *Raleigh Register* of April 14, 1801, in which he made reference to an announcement on the subject, by him, in the preceding year, but stated that he had decided to postpone the treatment until further experiments had been perfected in Europe and America. He says:

"The public have been taught to expect, from my advertisements of last year, that I shall, in the ensuing month, commence inoculation for the Smallpox; but I am prevented from doing this by the consideration of what is due from me to those who would have been my patients, whose ease and safety my own inclinations and the honor of my profession bind me to consult."

Further on in this communication Dr. Jones refers to emi-

nent practitioners in England, Scotland, Austria, and France, who had successfully used the treatment, and adds:

"Dr. Mitchell, of New York, and Dr. Waterhouse, of New Hampshire, have both received the matter of the disease from England, and propose inoculating early in the present season, so that we may expect it will soon become common in the United States."

The practice of vaccination, we may add, came into use in parts of North Carolina other than the vicinity of Raleigh about the time the above experiments were being made by Dr. Jones and his associates. The historical researches of Miss Adelaide L. Fries have recently brought to light the fact that in the old Moravian community of Salem, North Carolina, eighty persons (mostly children) were successfully treated in the Summer of 1802, by Dr. Samuel Vierling, the town physician, for whose use the parents in that place ("house-fathers" and "house-mothers") had obtained, by a special messenger whom they had sent to "a certain doctor in Raleigh," specimens of the cow-pox virus, with instructions for its proper use. When Dr. Vierling undertook this work at Salem he refused to say what compensation he would demand, as he did not know what trouble and expense the process would entail. He did state, however, that he would do the work as cheaply as possible; and we must credit him with keeping this promise to the letter, as the record concludes with the remark that Dr. Vierling "declined to accept any pay for his services."

Returning to the subject of the North Carolina Medical Society, little remains to be added. As already noted, we can find no record of its meetings after 1804. We may state in conclusion, however, that as the Society had made a collection of natural history specimens, etc., and as Dr. Calvin Jones was its secretary; and furthermore, as Dr. Jones turned over a "museum of artificial and natural curiosities" to the University of North Carolina, about twenty years later, on the eve of his removal to Tennessee, this gift to the University was in all probability the last remaining possession of the defunct North Carolina Medical Society.

## Proceedings of the North Carolina Society Daughters of the Revolution

Held in Edenton, October 24-26, 1916

---

At the annual meeting of the State Society D. R., held in Raleigh in 1915, on motion of the Vice-Regent, Mrs. Marshall Williams, it was voted to hold the annual meeting of 1916 in some of our historic old towns where the Society has a Chapter. So when Mrs. Patrick Matthew, Regent of the Penelope Barker Chapter, extended an invitation to the Daughters to visit Edenton, the invitation was accepted with delightful anticipation and without deliberation, for Edenton of all towns in the State is very near to the hearts of the Daughters of the Revolution. It was in studying the history of this Revolutionary hot-bed that they were inspired to commemorate the Edenton Tea Party of 1774 with a handsome bronze tablet, which was placed in the rotunda of the State Capitol at Raleigh in October, 1908. In order to raise funds for that purpose the NORTH CAROLINA BOOKLET was launched in May, 1901, at the suggestion of Miss Martha Helen Haywood, who, with Mrs. Hubert Haywood, was one of the first editors; and the Penelope Barker Chapter was the first Chapter organized by the North Carolina Daughters.

The Twentieth Annual Meeting of the North Carolina Society Daughters of the Revolution was held in the form of a pilgrimage to the historic "Borough Towne" of Edenton, variously called "ye Towne in Queen Anne's Creek," "ye Towne in Mattermacomock Creek," and "Port of Roanoke" in the oldest records. The Penelope Barker Chapter filled the rôle of hostess most charmingly October 24, 25 and 26.

The delegates arrived at noon Tuesday, October 24, and were met at the station by members of the Chapter and Mr Richard D. Dixon, representing his uncle, Dr. Richard Dillard (who was unavoidably absent) and driven to their destinations. That afternoon the gentlemen of the Historical Society gave a sail in honor of the visiting Daughters. The



weather was ideal and the famous Bay of Edenton, that has been so often compared to the Bay of Naples, never looked fairer than it did under the mellow rays of the radiant autumn sun, while Mattermacomock Creek was a veritable reproduction of fairyland with the rich tints of the changing forests, the waving Spanish moss and the vivid reflections borne on the smooth surface of its limpid waters. The dying of a perfect day and the brilliant afterglow amid such surroundings were watched intently by the guests, all of whom, save two, were enjoying the attractions of Edenton for the first time.

On landing, the party strolled to the home of Mr. Frank Wood, where they were entertained at tea by Miss Caroline W. Coke, Vice-Regent of the Penelope Barker Chapter. In the grounds of Mr. Wood's home, facing the court house green, stood the residence of Mrs. Elizabeth King, where the Edenton Tea Party was held, October 25, 1774, the site of which has been marked by Mr. Frank Wood with a pedestal mounted with a bronze tea pot. China that was owned by the distinguished President of the Tea Party, the stately Penelope Barker, was used, and delicious tea cakes, made from the recipe she had so frequently found useful, were served. On departing, each guest was presented with a typewritten recipe, rolled and tied with buff and blue ribbon, the Society's colors.

The recipe is:

PENELOPE BARKER TEA CAKES.—1 quart flour,  $\frac{3}{4}$  cup butter and lard, mixed; 2 large cups brown sugar, 3 eggs, 1 rounded teaspoonful soda. Beat eggs together well, adding sugar; next, soda, dissolved in 1 tablespoonful warm water (not hot). Flavor with vanilla. Lastly add quickly the flour, into which butter and lard have been well worked. Roll out as soft as possible and cut. Bake in a hot oven.

The parlor was tastefully decorated with trailing vines and pink roses. Miss Tillie Bond, the nearest living relative of Penelope Barker, was a guest of honor.

On Tuesday evening the Daughters met in the Colonial

court house, which had been appropriately dressed with yellow flowers and banners, carrying out the colors of the Daughters of the Revolution, Dr. Dillard presiding. The address of welcome, was delivered by the Regent of the Penelope Barker Chapter:

*Mme. Regent, Daughters of the Revolution, Ladies and Gentlemen:*

The first page of American history was written when Columbus appealed to the Court of Spain for a fleet with which to set sail upon that long, perilous voyage which terminated in his planting the Cross upon the Island of San Salvador, 1492.

From that time to the establishment of the Sir Walter Raleigh Colony on Roanoke Island to the settlement of the Chowan Precinct was but a short chain of events, but perfect in continuity.

Here, where the giants of the forest stood deep-rooted on the shores of this grand body of water, which is now known as the Albemarle Sound, flowing into the Atlantic Ocean, connecting the Old World with the New, was "Ye Little Towne on Queen Anne's Creek." With but a handful of people it set up its own government with its laws, court, customs, church, and thus early laid the foundation for an important centre of trade.

Surrounded by the Red Men, who soon became friends, they reduced to cultivation fertile fields which afforded the barter for the vessels which sailed into the harbor.

Without recorded explanation the name was changed to "Port of Roanoke," and here increased high life of Church and State, industries grew, wise patriots became known abroad, the capital of the State was here located, laws made, and her fame spread like the branches of the grandeur of the forest primeval.

Her commerce increased, ships multiplied in numbers, and the Old World wondered at her great possession.

In 1722 Governor Charles Eden died, and from that date

the name of the town has been Edenton, thus convincing us that it was named in memory of that distinguished statesman.

After years of servitude and discontent, with no representation in parliament, the cries of resentment grew pitiful, but the determination of resistance came from the women of Edenton in that document, The Edenton Tea Party, which shook the foundation of British rule in America, and sounded the first alarm at the court of St. James. Women have always been powerful, but the mighty stroke of independence was wielded by the pens of the immortal fifty-one who signed their names to that document, which was the key-note of the War of the Revolution.

So, Mme. Regent and Daughters of the Revolution, we bid you welcome to the home of our ancestors, the land of King Hoyle, the last sovereign ruler of the Choanokes, a man whose lovely character made the white people live in harmony with his tribe, and who gave his two sons to be taught to receive Christianity, for in his savage breast there beat a heart which knew that a greater God than their Great Spirit was Lord over the world and he wanted his sons to take up their cross and follow Him.

With your advent in our midst you receive the freedom of Edenton, and to one and all we bid you come to our houses, partake of our bounty, welcome you to our firesides, make you our friends, for be it ever so lowly "There's no place like home."

The following response was made by Miss Mary Hilliard Hinton, the State Regent:

*Officers and Daughters of the Revolution:*

It is a pleasure inexpressible for the North Carolina Society Daughters of the Revolution to assemble for the Twentieth Annual Meeting in this historic "Borough Town," variously referred to in the oldest records as the "Towne in Queen Anne's Creek," the "Towne in Mattermacomoek Creek," "Port of Roanoke," and later permanently and so appropriately named Edenton, though it must be admitted

the serpent is conspicuous through absence. It is a joyous privilege indeed to acknowledge the gracious words of this very cordial welcome, and to you, Madam Regent, and the Penelope Barker Chapter, we extend our warmest expressions of appreciation and gratitude.

Particularly dear to the hearts of the Daughters of the Revolution are Edenton and the Penelope Barker Chapter, for it was the noble history of this fair town which first inspired this Society to commemorate the "Edenton Tea Party" by placing a handsome bronze tablet in the State Capitol at Raleigh, the first to adorn that stately edifice, and as a way to raise the means necessary the NORTH CAROLINA BOOKLET was launched, May 10, 1901. In every important event in our past since then Edenton has been prominently represented, and some of the BOOKLET's most valuable contributions have been from the pen of her versatile writers, even to the youngest generation. The Penelope Barker Chapter has been our heart's pride, because it was the first Chapter organized, and its record can only arouse interest and stimulate ambition in historic research and patriotic achievements. It is an honor to have such a band of members respond to its roll call.

As we gather here today, some visitors for the first time to this Revolutionary hot-bed and centre of culture and refinement, naturally our thoughts revert to those stirring times that shook a great kingdom and a vast continent to their very foundations. We feel the sacred presence of the famous statesmen and the brave, fascinating women who moved in that long ago, for here they lived, labored and won laurels for the Patriot Cause that can never fade. These beautiful, historic buildings of the Colonial period have been rendered more interesting from the fact that they have resounded with the echoes of their voices and the fall of their footsteps. They pass before us in mental review. Foremost in that distant throng are Judge James Iredell, who, by his letters, has bequeathed to posterity such vivid delineations of the social life, Colonial and Revolutionary, of Edenton; Governor Samuel

Johnston, the builder of "Hayes," and his sisters, Hannah and Isabella; Joseph Hewes; James Wilson, of Pennsylvania; Thomas Barker, and his fair spouse, the immortal Penelope, and that beauty and belle, Betsy Barker, whose likeness present-day iconoclasts wish to confound with that of her noted step-mother, but whose separate portraits exist in middle Carolina, one of the President of the Tea Party loaned to the Hall of History at Raleigh and the other in the home of a descendant at Ridgeway, painted, it seems, by the same artist, but showing not one trace of resemblance. Each of the fifty-one signers of the Tea Party stand forth as clearly as though the mist of intervening years had vanished. Many, many, many others pass in the distinguished assemblage. We offer our homage to their hallowed memories and imbibe inspiration to aspire to higher ideals and the performance of deeds worth while.

Of all the towns of North Carolina none have preserved that ideal, restful Colonial atmosphere, all too rare in this age of perpetual unrest and dangerous commercialism, as has this sweet haven of rest, and nowhere else can be brewed as delicious a cup of tea, which proves that the fifty-one ladies that met at Mrs. King's house on the Court House Green one hundred and forty-two years ago tomorrow, understood the full meaning of self-denial! To Edenton we come to receive fresh impetus to proceed with extensive plans for a future of rose-tinted promise.

Six and a half years have passed since you entrusted to your Regent the highest office in the gift of the Society. It has been a pleasure to serve the order that is closest to her heart, even though in so doing she has been overworked with the requirements of the office, in addition to the demands of the BOOKLET, therefore she fully realizes her shortcomings and at all times, in glancing over the past, she trusts you will do so with kind indulgence.

During that space of time five Chapters, the Bloomsbury at Raleigh, the Roanoke at Windsor, the General Francis Nash at Hillsboro, the Mary Slocumb at Faison, and the



Thomas Robeson at Red Springs, have been organized, and two Junior Chapters, the Virginia Dare and Ensinore, at Elizabeth City, have been formed. The set of one hundred and nine lantern slides, most of which are colored, and the lecture, "Stories from North Carolina History," have been made and presented in Raleigh, Elizabeth City, Washington, Edenton, Windsor, and Winston-Salem. Eight tablets have been erected by the Chapters. A room has been furnished by the Chapters in Elizabeth City, called the "Virginia Dare Room." The chart and key of St. Paul's Churchyard has been presented this historic church, the painstaking work of the Penelope Barker Chapter. Twenty gold medals have been presented in the public schools in towns in North Carolina. Miss Catherine Albertson's book, "In Ancient Albemarle," has been published by the Society. Every annual meeting of the General Society, save that at Brooklyn in 1915, has been attended by delegates from North Carolina. The BOOKLET has been published and some brilliant social functions are some of the matters that have engaged the hearts and hands of the North Carolina Daughters.

Today the North Carolina Society is as loyal to the parent Society as she was in the pioneer days—aye, more so. We stand for the things she advocates and we are happy and content in being under her fold. Loyalty is one of the noblest traits that has been implanted in the nature of man. Would we be worthy of the great heroes whose deeds we commemorate were we untrue to the cause we have espoused? Our ranks are constantly being strengthened by the best, and we rejoice that we can face the future with confidence and hope of greater achievement.

To our beloved founder, Mrs. Fannie DeBernière Hooper Whitaker, we turn in loving remembrance, and we feel North Carolina has been richer for the influence she wielded and her memory continues to exert.

To the officers and members of the North Carolina Society your Regent extends her sincerest thanks for this list of good

works and for the whole-hearted support you have bestowed in times of labor and toil, in times of clouds and sunshine. Each of you has become dearer for the associations which shall be cherished always.

An address, giving the historical facts of this building, around which has centered so much of the past of Edenton, from Dr. Dillard, was enjoyed by the audience. The interior is modeled after the ancient basilica, and here the House of Burgesses assembled and guided the affairs of the Colony of North Carolina. Mrs. E. E. Moffitt, Honorary Regent of the North Carolina Society D. R., also talked on subjects of vital importance for the preservation of our State history.

October 25th—the anniversary of the Tea Party—dawned bright and clear. In celebration of that event four tablets were unveiled by the Penelope Barker Chapter. By 10 o'clock the citizens of Edenton had gathered in St. Paul's Church, the school children had marched from the Academy, bearing the banners of the Chapter, which on entering were placed at the church door, and the Daughters of the Revolution had taken the seats reserved for them along the main aisle, to take part in the impressive service that was conducted in the absence of the beloved Rector, Reverend Robert Brent Drane, D.D., by the Reverend B. F. Huske, Rector of Christ Church, New Bern, North Carolina. Here was unveiled by Richard Norfleet Hines, Jr., the marble tablet in the rear of the church to the signers of the "Test," who composed the vestry of St. Paul's at that time, renouncing allegiance to the crown. The text of the document and the names of the signers are engraved on the memorial in black letters. Mr. Huske's address was most interesting, and it is regretted by the Daughters that it was almost entirely extemporaneous.

From the church the throng repaired to the home of Judge James Iredell, where the marble tablet in the great outside brick chimney, the gift through the Daughters of the Revolution of the present owners and occupants, Mr. and Mrs. William T. Gordon, was unveiled by William Elliott and Ethel

McMullan. Colonel J. Bryan Grimes, President of the North Carolina Society of the Sons of the Revolution, made the speech of presentation. He spoke of the man, his life and splendid services to the State and the Union, of his influence on the Supreme Court of the United States and the Constitution. It was here that James Wilson, signer of the National Declaration of Independence from Pennsylvania, visited, and here he breathed his last. His remains were interred in the burying-ground at "Hayes" and later—several years ago—were removed to Philadelphia. Dr. Dillard accepted in his happiest manner for the town of Edenton:

*Ladies and Gentlemen:*

Prehistoric man built cairns or heaps of stone to commemorate important events; the ancient Egyptians emblazoned in hieroglyphics the deeds of their illustrious Pharaohs upon the faces of the everlasting pyramids; the history of the ancient Aztecs is written amid the picturesque mines of Mitla and Cholula, and Joshua set up twelve stones at Jordan, so that when the children should ask their fathers in times to come, "What mean ye by these stones? ye shall answer them that the waters of Jordan were cut off before the ark of the covenant of the Lord." And so on through all the ages, mankind has seen fit to mark in brass, or bronze, or graven stone, whatever was valuable for posterity—they are the hall-marks and symbols of immortality. We have had presented us today a tablet in honor of Edenton's most illustrious son; like Socrates he was "the perfection of earth's mental beauty, and the personification of all virtue"; the fairest star that glitters in the firmament of our history! And now, in behalf of the citizens of Edenton, and the Sons and Daughters of the Revolution, this tablet is most graciously accepted. Here let it stand, a perpetual inspiration to noble deeds, and virtuous actions! To the souls of fire let it give more fire, and to those who are slothful, let it give a might more than is man's! For who shall say that fame is but an empty name!

"In thinking of the honored dead  
The youth shall rise from slothful bed  
And now, with uplifted hand and heart,  
Like *him* to act a noble part."

At the Academy a bronze tablet to the Founders of the original Academy, on the exterior, near the entrance of the stately, pillared new structure, is placed, which was unveiled by Caroline Privott, daughter of a trustee. Colonel J. Bryan Grimes presenting, and Mr. J. Norfleet Pruden accepting on behalf of the Board of Trustees. Colonel Olds also addressed the throng, speaking of the duty that rested upon the children, the future makers of Edenton and the keepers of her splendid past.

To the court house the children marched, followed by the audience, to witness the presentation by Colonel C. S. Vann, who, in speaking, paid a high tribute to womanhood, and the acceptance of Mr. F. W. Hobbs, Clerk of the Court, of the bronze tablet, unveiled by daughters of county officers, Frances Brownley Evans, Elsie Goodwin, Cornelia Harrell, and Sadie Hobbs, on the exterior of the edifice to the fifty-one signers of the Edenton Tea Party.

Mr. Hobbs said:

*Ladies and Gentlemen:*

Although I am no speechmaker I wish to assure you that it affords me a peculiar pleasure to accept the tablet commemorative of one of the most important historical events recorded upon the annals, embracing the history of our grand old town, county, and commonwealth.

The Daughters of the Revolution deserve the highest commendation at our hands for the splendid work they have accomplished in placing tablets here and there in our town, which Col. R. B. Creecy said was the most historical of all the towns in the State. These matters of history will always be recognized as most important, for frequently they are the source of inspiration to succeeding generations, and I believe to have them carved upon enduring metal, or other lasting

material, and placed where they can, on all public occasions, be seen, will have a tendency to elevate the ideals of our citizenship, make them more patriotic, and lovers of our grand old State and glorious Nation.

I thank these ladies for their manifested interest in these matters, and again state with great pleasure I accept, on behalf of the Board of Commissioners and the citizenship of the County of Chowan, this splendid tablet which commemorates such glorious courage and patriotism of our women of the Revolutionary War. To read these resolutions is enough to make us proud of our women of this stirring period of our country's history, and to make us glad that we are to the manner born.

We welcome to the county the North Carolina Society Daughters of the Revolution, and have placed at their disposal this court house, within whose walls have presided and pleaded statesmen and men who were giants in their profession and times, honored and esteemed by their fellow countrymen.

The "Resolves" signed two hundred and forty-two years ago and the names of the patriotic signers are given thereon.

On the conclusion of these instructive and enjoyable exercises the Daughters of the Revolution were cordially invited by Dr. Dillard to visit "Beverly Hall." Here amid the rare plants, flowers and ornamentation of his Italian garden, and in the library, where each recorded her name in the guest book, time flew, and soon the Daughters were rushed off to charming luncheons with Mrs. William D. Pruden and Miss Sophie Martin Wood, at historic "Hayes," conceded by Virginia authorities to be the most interesting home in the South.

The afternoon was devoted to the transaction of business in the court house, Miss Hinton presiding. Reports from the State officers and Chapter Regents were read and plans discussed for entertaining the General Society in Raleigh in April, 1917. Twenty-five dollars for the publication of the minutes of this meeting in the BOOKLET were donated by the



visiting delegates, and it was voted to have a handsome silk banner made this winter, such as the other State Societies possess. This will bear the State flag and will be adorned with the hornet's nest, emblems of the Edenton Tea Party, etc. Seventeen new members have joined during the year 1916, and thirty-two more are filling out their papers. Two new Chapters, the Mary Slocomb at Faison, of which Miss Georgia Hicks is Regent, and the Colonel Thomas Robeson, at Red Springs, have been organized, while another of young girls is being formed. A motion was carried that the Society request Colonel Charles Earle Johnson to reprint the "Life and Letters of James Iredell," by McRee, now out of print. This cast such light on the grave questions of the Colonial, Revolutionary, and post-Revolutionary periods and on the delightful social life of Edenton of Judge Iredell's day that it is needed in our public and private libraries.

#### REPORT OF THE RECORDING SECRETARY—MRS. L. E. COVINGTON.

The North Carolina Society Daughters of the Revolution have, during the year 1915-1916, done substantial, good work. The Society has maintained its high standard of patriotic zeal and worth-while accomplishments.

Quite a number of energetic, ambitious members have been added and they are already taking up the work of the Society with vigor and zeal. It behooves those of us who have been members for some years not to lag behind these new members in zeal; and, in fact, we should endeavor to inspire and encourage them to the most energetic service. Social, domestic, and often literary duties are pressing upon us and the temptation is to leave the hardest work to the most willing ones; but, remembering that we are descended from the men who took upon themselves unselfish, faithful service to their country, we cannot be faithless to the trust of ours, to keep their memory fresh and green, to erect from time to time tablets and memorials so that heroes and heroic deeds may not be forgot-

ten; and, above all, to inspire in the present generation a love for their country and their country's heroes.

Perhaps the most important work that our North Carolina Society has done and is doing is the publication of the NORTH CAROLINA BOOKLET, begun some years ago by Miss Martha Haywood and Mrs. Hubert Haywood and now continued by Miss Mary Hinton and Mrs. E. E. Moffitt. The most valuable historical papers are, in the BOOKLET, collected in tangible, enduring form; well known authorities give accurate, carefully written articles; and, under Miss Hinton's wise editorship, the NORTH CAROLINA BOOKLET has become a storehouse of information, and, to the BOOKLET, scholars, teachers, and students are constantly referring for facts of historical importance. The recent series of articles on the North Carolina Secretaries of the Navy have received more attention and have been most favorably reviewed by the press in different sections of the State.

During the recent Convention of the General Society, held last May in New York, the North Carolina Society was represented by Miss Hinton, Regent; Mrs. Paul Lee, Corresponding Secretary; Mrs. Marshall Williams, Vice-Regent, and Mrs. C. C. Phillips of New York. The invitation was extended by the North Carolina Society through Miss Hinton to have the General Society hold its meeting in Raleigh in 1917. The invitation was accepted and Raleigh will be hostess some time next year, either in April or May, to a distinguished gathering of women. There has been appointed by Miss Hinton a Ways and Means Committee to arrange for expenses incident to this meeting, and plans are being formulated as to the program of entertainment, etc.

Mrs. Covington then quoted from *The Patriot*, a part of Miss Hinton's report, read at the New York Convention in April, 1916.

The report from Mrs. Chas. Lee Smith, Treasurer, was read, showing receipts amounting to \$164.33, and disburse-

ments amounting to \$118.59, leaving a balance on hand of \$45.74. It was moved and carried that this report be accepted.

Miss Hinton, Regent, and editor of the BOOKLET, reported for volumes XIII, XIV, XV, extending from July, 1913, to July, 1916. Moved and carried that this report be approved.

The Registrar, Miss Sarah W. Ashe, reports these new members:

Mrs. Fannie Yarborough Bickett, Louisburg, N. C. (wife of Attorney-General [now Governor] Hon. Walter Bickett).

Mrs. Mary Davis Holt, Burlington, N. C. (wife of Mr. Erwin Allen Holt).

Miss Elizabeth Ireland, Faison, N. C.

Mrs. Mary Lou Brown Hill, Warsaw, N. C. (wife of Mr. William L. Hill).

Mrs. Annie H. Witherington, Faison, N. C. (wife of Mr. B. B. Witherington).

Mrs. Nyda H. Weatherby, Faison, N. C. (wife of Mr. Carleton E. Weatherby).

Miss Winifred Faison, Faison, N. C.

Miss Georgia Hicks, Faison, N. C.

Mrs. Janie Hicks Phillips, New York City (wife of Mr. C. C. Phillips).

Miss Louise Phillips, New York City.

Mrs. Lila H. Hines, Faison, N. C. (wife of C. Shaw Hines).

Mrs. Mary Franklin Pass Fearington, Winston-Salem, N. C. (wife of Dr. J. P. Fearington).

Miss Faith Fearington, Winston-Salem, N. C.

Mrs. Elizabeth R. F. Croom, Wilmington, N. C. (wife of Mr. Avery Burr Croom).

Miss Mary Perrett, Faison, N. C.

Mrs. Ruth Huntington Moore, Raleigh, N. C.

Mrs. Annie Ramsey, Raleigh, N. C. (wife of Dr. George J. Ramsey).

Report from Mrs. Matthew, Regent of the Penelope Bar-

ker Chapter, which report, she said, was written on bronze and marble, the four tablets unveiled today bespeaking the work of this chapter. A fine work in necrology has also been done. It was moved and carried that this report be accepted.

Report from Mrs. I. M. Meekins, Regent of the Sir Walter Raleigh Chapter:

**REPORT OF THE SIR WALTER RALEIGH CHAPTER,  
DAUGHTERS OF THE REVOLUTION.**

Miss Catherine Albertson, former Regent of the Sir Walter Raleigh Chapter D. R., resigned her office as Regent last October, as her duties as Principal of the High School prevent her from carrying on the work of the Chapter.

Mrs. I. M. Meekins, Vice-President, then became Regent.

The pupils of the High School manifested unusual interest in the competition for the medal offered by the State Society D. R. last spring. The subject chosen was "The Life of John Harvey," and the medal was won by Miss Ida Owens, a member of the Senior Class of '16.

Miss Albertson presented the medal to Miss Owens on Thursday night, June 1st, during the graduating exercises of the High School Senior Class, and took occasion to make a short address to the audience, commemorating the services of John Harvey to the State of North Carolina.

On June 11th, a meeting of the Sir Walter Raleigh, Ensenore, and Virginia Dare Chapters was held at the residence of Mrs. I. M. Meekins, for the purpose of arranging for a D. R. float to take part in a parade on July 4th, in which the various civic and patriotic organizations of the town were asked to join.

July Fourth a seven passenger automobile was decorated with the D. R. colors and filled with members of the Junior D. R., dressed in Colonial costumes.

The three D. R. Chapters still hope to erect the memorial fountain to Virginia Dare, and as the Juniors grow to womanhood to erect in our county the memorial tablets to preserve her history.

**REPORT FROM THE BLOOMSBURY CHAPTER.**

The Bloomsbury Chapter D. R. was formed April 9, 1910. Although young in age it has, under the leadership of Mrs. Hubert Haywood, its Regent, marked several historical places.

The first one being the site of the old town of Bloomsbury, or Wake Court House.

The memorial was a bronze tablet placed on a natural boulder of Wake County granite, and located at the corner of Boylan Avenue and Morgan Street.

The second: The Chapter presented to the City of Raleigh a beautiful bronze tablet to the memory of Col. Joel Lane. It was placed on the left hand side of the entrance to the City Municipal Building.

In the near future the Chapter expects to mark Tryon's Road (Ramsgate Road). This road was used by Tryon on his march against the Regulators at Alamance. It is situated south of Raleigh.

Nearly seventy dollars is in the treasury for this purpose. Several of the members have contributed to this cause, and forty-six dollars and thirty-five cents (\$46.35) were made from a moving picture benefit.

The Chapter decided that it would take the noted women of North Carolina during the Revolutionary period as the topic for this year.

In addition to the regular business meetings held during the year there were two especially enjoyable occasions.

On New Year's day the Chapter met with Mrs. James E. Shepherd. After the business of the Chapter was dispatched several historical places and noted women of the Colonial period were discussed. During the afternoon Mrs. Shepherd served delightful refreshments typical of the New Year.

Washington's birthday was celebrated this year at the home of Mrs. Geo. P. Pell.



The decorations of the house, the papers read and the songs sung were all suggestive of the occasion.

Then followed delightful refreshments which carried out the patriotic idea.

GRACE H. BATES,

*Sec'y Bloomsbury Chapter D. R.*

Report from the Gen. Francis Nash Chapter, Miss Rebecca Cameron, Regent, was read and approved. This Chapter has done no active work in the past year, but has maintained organized membership. With infinite sorrow they report the death of one of their beloved members, Mrs. Annie Ruffin Collins (Mrs. George P. Collins).

Miss Georgia Hicks, Regent of the Mary Slocumb Chapter, read the report from this Chapter:

#### REPORT OF THE MARY SLOCUMB CHAPTER DAUGHTERS OF THE REVOLUTION, OCTOBER 25, 1916.

The Mary Slocumb Chapter was organized March 20, 1916, in the home of Mrs. Marshall Williams, State Vice-Regent. Mrs. Williams presided and read the Constitution and By-laws, and object of the Society. Officers elected were: Regent, Miss Georgia Hicks; Vice-Regent, Mrs. W. L. Hill, Warsaw; Secretary, Miss Elizabeth Newton Ireland.

The name of the Chapter, "Mary Slocumb," was selected by a unanimous vote. Fifteen ladies now constitute the membership and we will probably have more before very long. Mrs. Williams and Miss Hicks entertained the Chapter at the June meeting. Mrs. Williams gave a most interesting account of her visit to New York as delegate to the National D. R. Convention. Miss Hicks read a sketch of Nathaniel Macon, and Mrs. Witherington an article on Colonial hospitality. This winter we will probably study Revolutionary history, beginning with sketches of the men and women of those times. As our Chapter is probably one of the most recently formed in the State it may not be amiss to give a little sketch of the heroine for whom it is named, "Mary Slocumb." Among the brave men who took part in the Battle of Moore's

Creek Bridge was Capt. Ezekiel Slocumb, of Wayne County, whose home was near the Neuse River. He left his home on Sunday, previous to the battle, in high spirits, with eighty men to join the forces under Col. Richard Caswell, and to do battle against the Tories. Mrs. Slocumb, the wife of the Captain, said she kept thinking about her husband all day, when he was going with his men, and the Tories they would meet, and though she worked hard all day the situation of Captain Slocumb and his men could not be banished from her mind. That night she had a "dream that was not all a dream." She saw distinctly a body wrapped in her husband's guard cloak, bloody and dead, and others dead and wounded on the ground. She felt she must go to her husband, and in a few minutes after awakening she saddled her horse and rode at full speed in the direction the men had taken. All night, with scarcely a break in the pace, she rode through Duplin and New Hanover counties, through the lone pine woods. About sunrise she passed groups of women and children on the road-side exhibiting equal anxiety to hear from the battle, but she paused not until, after riding 65 miles, she came into swampy ground and heard the thunder of the cannon. To use her words, she said, "I stopped still, the battle was fighting then. I could hear the muskets and the shouting. I spoke to my mare and dashed on in the direction of the firing." The shouts grew louder as she drew nearer, and she said, "I saw, a few yards away from the road, under a cluster of trees perhaps twenty men lying—they were wounded. I knew the spot as if I had seen it a thousand times, and the position of the men. I had seen it all night. In an instant my whole soul was centered on one spot, for there, wrapped in his bloody guard cloak, was my husband's body. How I passed the few yards from my saddle to the place I never knew. I remember uncovering his head and seeing a face clotted with blood from a dreadful wound across the temples. I put my hand on the bloody face, and an unknown voice begged for water—it was Frank Cogdell. Just then, I looked

up and my husband, bloody as a butcher, and muddy as a ditcher, stood before me." Her husband was wounded, but not seriously. She spent the day in tenderly nursing the wounded and dying, then returned home.

Captain Slocumb survived the varying fortunes of the Revolution, and he and his courageous and devoted wife lie buried beneath modest slabs on their old plantation home. Some of us have heard the story of this brave woman from our earliest years, and to this day, though we frequently pass the old burying ground, we always look for the white tombstones, and think of the heroism of Mary Slocumb.

Respectfully submitted,

GEORGIA HICKS.

The Corresponding Secretary, Mrs. Paul H. Lee, of Raleigh, gave an interesting report of the annual meeting of the General Society, held in New York last April:

According to a pleasant custom the New York State Society was hostess to the National Society Daughters of the Revolution for the Convention of 1916, at the Waldorf-Astoria, the Convention of this year commemorating the twenty-fifth anniversary of the Society. The Silver Jubilee being an occasion of great significance brought together representatives from all parts of the country.

The formal opening of the Convention was on Tuesday morning, May 2d, at 11:30. A procession, led by juniors, with past and present officers and especially invited speakers, marched to the rostrum and took their places. Rev. Dr. Robert Clark, Chaplain of the New York Society, offered an invocation, then the salute and pledge to the flag was given by the gathering. The regular program was an address of welcome by Miss Carville, Regent of the New York State Society, and was brim-full of hearty expressions of welcome, and was received with much applause. Mayor Mitchell was to have spoken the words of greeting from the city, but was unable to attend at the last moment, and was represented by Hon. Cabot Ward, Park Commissioner. Mr. Ward bade the dele-

gates a hearty welcome in the name of the Mayor and the City of New York. The President-General's address spoke for itself, ringing clear the keynote of patriotism. This was followed by the annual reports of the different officers.

The afternoon session was given over to the report of the standing committees and reports of the State Regents. Breaking the regular routine of the program for the afternoon the Convention was entertained by Madam Arehtowska, an American, whose husband, a native of Poland, made an address in behalf of the sufferers of Poland, and spoke of the appropriateness of an organization like the Daughters of the Revolution, whose forefathers had fought beside Kosciusko and Pulaski, repaying the debt of gratitude by material help to the country from which these two men came to aid the Colonies in their time of need. "The Star Spangled Banner" was then sung with enthusiasm.

The morning session of the second day of the Convention opened with the recital of the Lord's Prayer in unison. The minutes of the previous meeting were read and approved. The Nominating Committee having been chosen on the previous day the election of officers for the next two years was in order. There were two candidates for President-General: Mrs. Keay, from Pennsylvania, and Mrs. Raynor, of New York. A number of speeches were made setting forth the qualifications of each candidate. When the ballots were counted the Nominating Committee reported that Mrs. Raynor had received the majority vote and was therefore declared the President-General for the next two years. While the ballots were being counted reports were still being read from the State Chapters. Miss Hinton, Regent of the North Carolina Society, gave a very complete and gratifying report of the work done by the State Society. It was very pleasing that there was a good representation from the "Old North State."

The opening feature of the afternoon session of May 3d was a telegram from West Virginia announcing a gift of \$25

as a silver jubilee present. Two vocal solos were rendered; then several announcements were made, the most important being an invitation extended to the General Society by Miss Hinton, reading: "The North Carolina Society cordially invites the General Society Daughters of the Revolution to hold the annual meeting of 1917 in Raleigh, North Carolina." On motion of Miss Carville, of New York, seconded by Mrs. Berry, of Long Island, the invitation was accepted. The yearly volume of the NORTH CAROLINA BOOKLET was presented most graciously by the Vice-Regent, Mrs. Marshall Williams. The gift was acknowledged by the President-General.

A very pleasant departure from business was a visit from Mrs. Theodore Roosevelt, Jr., a member of the Woman's Section Committee of the Preparedness Parade, who came to extend an invitation to the Daughters to take part in the Preparedness Divisions of the patriotic Societies.

Now we will turn to the numerous entertainments planned for the pleasure of the delegates. There was a reminder of New Amsterdam in the selection of the Holland House for the reception of welcome given by the New York State Society to officers, delegates, and visitors, from four to six o'clock on Monday afternoon, May 1st. A continuous procession passed down the line, headed by Miss Carville, Regent of New York, and the general officers. The Hospitality Committee looked after the serving of refreshments and making every one feel welcome. When the last strains of the orchestra died away one could feel "The End of a Perfect Day."

On the following afternoon the Board of Managers of the General Society gave a tea in the East Room of the Waldorf in honor of those on roll of the first two hundred and fifty members of the Society. An invitation was extended to all delegates and visitors to pay their respects to these pioneer members. Conspicuous among the pioneer members present was Mrs. Joseph J. Casey, one of the incorporators and for nineteen years Registrar-General.



The principal social function this year was a luncheon, which was a reversion from the regular custom of a banquet. The business being over, every one was ready for the function, which meant a good time. The luncheon was served in the Astor gallery, the hall being resplendent with decorations of flags and flowers, amid its gorgeous hangings of gold. The menu, lists of guests of honor, and program of toasts were enclosed in a cover of buff, adorned with a water-color reproduction of an old print of the inauguration of George Washington, at Federal Hall, Wall Street, April 30, 1789. The guests were entertained by an address on Preparedness, from Major-General Leonard Wood, of U. S. A. Mrs. Chas. S. Whitman, the wife of the Governor of New York, was also a guest of honor.

After a group of German songs, Mrs. Kent, the toastmistress, introduced the speakers, who were seated on a dias banked with flowers. Each toast given was a retrospect of the twenty-five full years of the Society. When Mrs. Bleakley, the retiring President-General, rose to give her parting word she was visibly affected. She spoke briefly of the activities of the past four years, and urged all to work for the Society under the new leadership.

The three toasts that followed the President-General's were given by ex-Presidents-General, the toasts being as follows: "The Woman of the Past," by Mrs. D. Phoenix Ingraham; "The Woman of the Present," by Mrs. Adeline F. Fitz, and "The Woman of the Future," by Miss Adaline W. Sterling. The final toast was given by Mrs. Nathaniel S. Keay, Vice-President-General.

At the close of the feast gifts were bestowed on each past and present President-General, in the order of her service, a beautiful pin of platinum and gold in the form of a friendship wreath, to which was attached the Society Ribbon, bearing in silver letters, "1891-1916," as an expression of love from the State Societies. This testimonial came as a complete surprise, all recipients were present and much appre-

ciation was shown by the past officers as evidence of the strong tie that binds the Daughters together.

At the coffee stage of the luncheon two ushers passed from table to table, placing beside each guest a box tied with buff and blue ribbon, containing a souvenir in the form of a dainty silver teaspoon of Revolutionary pattern, inscribed "D. R., 1891-1916."

Friday, May 5th, was set to show the visitors New York's wonderful park-way system. The weather did not smile upon us; instead showers and clouds fell, but a few glimpses of sunshine insured the excursion. Automobiles were found at the 34th street entrance of the Waldorf, and when the tourists had been placed the start began. The route led through Fifth Avenue, thence by Pelham to Travers Island, where the party was scheduled to lunch at the New York Athletic Club. The luncheon was served on the enclosed balcony of the Club, and was quite refreshing. After luncheon the Daughters returned to their respective vehicles and started for Yonkers, through parks along historic roads. Automobiles sped until we reached the doorway of the hospitable home of Mrs. Bleakley, who gave the delegates a cordial welcome; the refreshments were as bountiful as the greeting was hearty. Reluctantly the visitors turned toward New York, carrying with them the memory of a charming day.

On Saturday morning, May 6th, a pilgrimage was made around historic lower New York, winding up at Frances Tavern for refreshments and rest.

A glorious May afternoon formed the beautiful setting for the last event of the Convention, when a large company assembled to attend the opening of Fort Independence Park, and to witness the unveiling of two bronze memorial tablets, the gift of the General Society Daughters of the Revolution. These tablets adorn the gate-posts that stand at the entrance of Fort Independence Park, which includes the exterior defences of the Revolutionary Fort. The erection of this splendid memorial is due to the untiring efforts of Mrs. Raynor, the

newly-elected President-General. The retiring President-General made a stirring address, taking as her theme the dedication of the Park as an inspiration to the youth of our nation. When the last strains of "The Star Spangled Banner" had died away, the last chapter of the Convention of 1916 had passed into history.

Miss Georgia Hicks, of Faison, was elected Historian. There will be no change in the officers until the next annual meeting, which will be held in Raleigh, after the meeting of the General Society, the invitation extended by the Bloomsbury Chapter being accepted. In the absence of Mrs. L. E. Covington, Mrs. Charles P. Wales (Duncan Cameron Winston), formerly a Vice-Regent of the Society, acted as Recording Secretary.

The evening of the 25th a tea party was given by the Regent of the Penelope Barker Chapter at her lovely Colonial home that dates back to 1722, which was the scene of beauty, wit, and chivalry. Flowers—golden blossoms predominating—were banked here and there. The hostess, assisted by the Vice-Regent of the Chapter, Miss Caroline W. Coke, received the guests in the front drawing-room with charming grace. She wore a handsome creation of white chiffon, with train of black velvet, and trimmed with rare lace, an heirloom handed down in Mr. Matthew's family in Scotland for generations, that had been the bridal veil of a relative in the long-ago—the Countess of Campbelldown. A feature of the evening was the tea party tableau—a table and several chairs of the Revolutionary period were arranged in the centre of the front drawing-room, around which sat and stood the members of the Penelope Barker Chapter, each in turn signing another document expressing the friendship and good-will of this province by the descendents of the Tea Party signers of the distant past. Mrs. Selby Harney, a descendant of Winifred Hoskins, acted as Secretary of the Tea Party of 1916.

Telegrams of greeting, congratulations, and good wishes from Mrs. Cordelia Armstrong Raynor, President-General

Daughters of the Revolution; Mrs. Alfred Moore Waddell, President North Carolina Society of Colonial Dames; the North Carolina Society Sons of the Revolution, and Colonel and Mrs. Charles Earle Johnson, were read by Miss Hinton, as follows:

NEW YORK, October 24, 1916.

*Miss Mary Hilliard Hinton:*

The President-General sends greetings to the North Carolina Society, its Regent and members. Would like to be with the Penelope Barker Chapter. The report from North Carolina was inspiring last Monday. We are working for a great ideal: Liberty, Home, and Country.

CORDELIA A. RAYNOR.

*Miss M. H. Hinton, Regent of the North Carolina Society Daughters of the Revolution:*

WILMINGTON, N. C., October 24, 1916.

The North Carolina Society Colonial Dames of America send greeting. May continued success attend your efforts to keep in remembrance the glorious deeds of the past.

G. WADDELL.

*President N. C. S. C. D. A.*

RALEIGH, N. C., October 24, 1916.

*Miss Mary Hilliard Hinton, State Regent of the Daughters of the Revolution:*

The Society of Sons of the Revolution extends congratulations to the Daughters of the Revolution on this occasion of their annual meeting in the historic borough of Edenton, and wishes your organization all the success which the patriotic labors of its members so richly deserve.

MARSHALL DELANCY HAYWOOD,

*Sec'y. of the Sons of the Revolution.*

RALEIGH, N. C., October 24, 1916.

*Miss Mary Hilliard Hinton, State Regent D. R.:*

Mrs. Johnson and I wish to express to you, and through you to the Daughters of the Revolution, our appreciation of the noble work being done by your patriotic Society, and to voice our regret that we cannot be present with you today in person, as we are in spirit and in thought.

CHAS. E. JOHNSON.

The State Vice-Regent, Mrs. Marshall Williams, offered a resolution of thanks most gracefully expressed for the many courtesies extended by the local Chapter Daughters of the Revolution and citizens of Edenton:

"Scarcely had we arrived in historical Edenton before we realized that coupled with patriotism was unbounded hospitality.

To the gentlemen of the Historical Society for the interesting and delightful boat ride, the joy experienced as we glided along that 'river of dreams,' reflecting and mirroring the beauties of lavish nature, is inexpressible.

Then the cup of refreshing tea and delicious cakes served at the home of Mr. Frank Wood, Miss Carrie Coke, the Vice-Regent of the local Chapter being hostess, and allow us to repeat our thanks for the recipe of the famous Penelope Barker tea cakes, useful souvenirs indeed.

Welcome evening made us feel very much at home through the courtesy of your Regent, Mrs. Patrick Matthew, who greeted us in her own charming way and then a welcome from that prince of gentlemen, Dr. Dillard. Indeed we were entranced to feel ourselves seated in the House of Burgesses and hear the history of the famous judges who sojourned here.

The exercises in St. Paul's Church were an inspiration, and we rejoice with the Edenton people in having Mr. Huske of New Berne to present the tablet. We were glad to see so many school children present to witness this eventful ceremony.

We enjoyed the address of Colonel Grimes when the Iredell tablet was unveiled and the acceptance by the silver tongued orator, Dr. Dillard. Of especial interest was our visit to the home of Mrs. Gordon.

It was pleasant to visit the artistic and beautiful new Academy and again witness another tablet unveiled and accepted by Mr. Pruden, Chairman of Trustees.

Long to be remembered was the unveiling of the tablet at the court house to the women of the Edenton Tea Party, and Colonel Vann's tribute to womanhood and the acceptance by Mr. F. W. Hobbs, Clerk of the Court.

The Society of the visiting Daughters is greatly indebted



to Mrs. Pruden and Mrs. John Wood for a real peep into the fireside and social life of the charming and cultured homes of Edenton—rich in rare and interesting relics.

Our Society was honored by the presence of Colonel Olds, State Historian.

Last, but by no means least, were our delightful moments spent in the Italian garden of the genial host, Dr. Dillard, where we walked with Milton in a Paradise and dreamed with Dante of Beatrice.

All good things must end save one. Among the choice things of earth there is nothing so fair as memory; without it there would be no history, no friendship, no love of patriotic tradition.

So we will take with us in memory's storehouse this delightful occasion, showered with intellectual gifts and gracious hospitality, and will count it another pearl in our rosary of grateful thoughts."

Witty toasts by Mrs. Williams and Mrs. Matthew were given. Delicious refreshments in two courses with the cup of tea, brewed as nowhere else on this side of the Atlantic, were served. Miss Hinton and Mrs. Williams presided at the tea table. After reading a list of the achievements of the North Carolina Society Daughters of the Revolution, the Regent expressed, on behalf of the Society, appreciation of the cordiality and delightful hospitality of the Edentonians and good-nights were said.

**WHAT THE NORTH CAROLINA SOCIETY DAUGHTERS OF  
THE REVOLUTION HAS ACCOMPLISHED SINCE  
IT WAS FOUNDED, OCTOBER 19, 1896.**

Raised funds through the publication of the NORTH CAROLINA BOOKLET to erect a bronze tablet, cast by Gorham and Company, to the memory of the fifty-one signers of the Edenton Tea Party, in the State Capitol at Raleigh, the first memorial to adorn that building, in October, 1908.

Since May, 10, 1901, has published the NORTH CAROLINA BOOKLET, an historical magazine, devoted to North Carolina

History—"Great Events in North Carolina History." It has just entered upon the sixteenth volume. The editors and contributors have always served without remuneration. There is no capital stock, the periodical being run on faith, as it were, but more than five thousand dollars have been spent in publishing it and about a thousand dollars have been cleared, all made from the subscriptions and advertisements. More than three hundred articles have been contributed by one hundred and five writers, thirty-two of these being women. It goes to all the libraries of our greatest Universities and the great libraries of the country, and to many colleges. It has subscribers in twenty-eight States of the Union, Great Britain, and India.

The site of the meeting of the Grand Albemarle Assembly, February 6, 1665, was located and marked by a handsome tablet, June 11, 1910, by the Sir Walter Raleigh Chapter of Elizabeth City.

A marble tablet has been placed in the High School of Elizabeth City, containing a record of the great events in the history of Pasquotank County, the work of the Sir Walter Raleigh Chapter.

A room bearing the name "Virginia Dare Room," in the hospital at Elizabeth City, has been furnished by the two Junior Chapters of that town—the Virginia Dare and Ensinnore.

On April 26, 1911, the Bloomsbury Chapter erected a tablet and boulder to mark the location of the site of the old town of Bloomsbury, where our capital city now stands.

On April 23, 1913, the Bloomsbury Chapter placed a bronze tablet on the City Municipal Building, to the memory of Colonel Joel Lane, who was instrumental in locating the capital at Raleigh.

The set of one hundred and nine lantern slides, ninety-four of which are colored, and the lecture that accompanies them, "Stories From North Carolina History," is the work of the entire State Society.

The Penelope Barker Chapter, at Edenton, has erected the following tablets:

A tablet on the exterior of St. Paul's Church.

A tablet on the exterior of the court house.

A bronze tablet on the east side of the court house, containing the Tea Party Resolutions and the names of the fifty-one signers.

A bronze tablet on the south side of the Edenton Academy, dedicated to its founders.

A marble tablet in the interior of St. Paul's Church, dedicated to its vestrymen who signed the "Test" for American Independence.

A marble tablet in the great brick chimney of Judge James Iredell's home.

A complete map and key of St. Paul's churchyard have been made by the Penelope Barker Chapter, and presented to the said Parish.

Twenty-five gold medals have been presented in the public schools of North Carolina to pupils writing the best essays on some given historical subject, North Carolina history being selected.

The North Carolina Society assisted in collecting, installing, taking care of, packing and recording the North Carolina Historical Exhibit at Jamestown Exposition in 1907.

The Society has contributed liberally towards funds used in erecting monuments by the General Society at Valley Forge, Cambridge, Massachusetts, where General Washington took command of the American Army under the historic elm on Cambridge Common, and the bronze tablet to the seamen of the American Navy during the Revolution that was placed in Baneroff Hall, Annapolis, in May, 1910.

Marking the grave of Sergeant Koen, of the Revolution, by the Sir Walter Raleigh Chapter.

Placing a tombstone over the grave of General Isaac Gregory, in the Gregory burying ground at "Fairfax."

Publishing the original historical papers of Miss Catherine Albertson, in a book entitled, "In Ancient Albemarle."

The tablet erected by the Red Men, through the Penelope Barker Chapter, on the exterior of the court house, Edenton, N. C.

Thursday morning was devoted to sight-seeing. The Cupola House, where Miss Bond requested the Daughters to register in the guest book that only contained the autographs of the Society of the Cincinnati when they visited this Colonial mansion, St. Paul's churchyard, and "Hayes" were visited. The grave of Penelope Barker, in the burying-ground at "Hayes," where she sleeps beside her husband, Thomas Barker, was strewn with golden flowers by the Daughters.

The delegates left at noon, carrying the happiest recollections of their Twentieth Annual Meeting, of the one-time capital of North Carolina and her hospitable inhabitants, worthy inheritors of her glorious past and noble men and women.

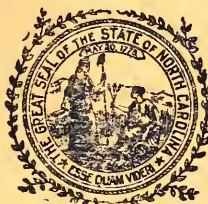
The officers of the Society are: Regent, Miss Mary Hilliard Hinton; Vice-Regent, Mrs. Marshall Williams; Honorary Regents, Mrs. E. E. Moffitt and Mrs. T. K. Bruner; Recording Secretary, Mrs. L. E. Covington; Corresponding Secretary, Mrs. Paul H. Lee; Treasurer, Mrs. Charles Lee Smith; Registrar, Miss Sarah W. Ashe.

Vol. XVI

APRIL, 1917

No. 4

# *The* North Carolina Booklet



## GREAT EVENTS IN NORTH CAROLINA HISTORY



PUBLISHED QUARTERLY  
BY  
THE NORTH CAROLINA SOCIETY  
DAUGHTERS OF THE REVOLUTION  
RALEIGH, N. C.

### CONTENTS

	PAGE.
General D. H. Hill as a Teacher and Author-----	191
By DR. HENRY ELLIOT SHEPHERD.	
The Voyage of Verrazzano -----	209
By R. D. W. CONNOR.	
First Secession Flag -----	219
By GENERAL W. A. SMITH.	
Genealogical Department -----	227
By SYBIL HYATT.	

SINGLE NUMBERS 35 CENTS

\$1.00 THE YEAR

*Entered at the Postoffice at Raleigh, N. C., July 15, 1905, under the Act of Congress of March 3, 1879*



# The North Carolina Booklet

---

## Great Events in North Carolina History

---

VOLUME XVII of THE BOOKLET will be issued quarterly by the North Carolina Society, Daughters of the Revolution, beginning July, 1917. THE BOOKLET will be published in July, October, January, and April. Price \$1.00 per year, 35 cents for single copy.

EDITOR :

MISS MARY HILLIARD HINTON.

BIOGRAPHICAL EDITOR :

MRS. E. E. MOFFITT.

### VOLUME XVII.

Isaac Shelby: Revolutionary Patriot and Border Hero—Part II—  
Dr. Archibald Henderson.

Revolutionary Heroines of Mecklenburg—Miss Violet Alexander.

Glimpses of Plantation Life in the Old South—By an Eye Witness.

History of Rowan County—Dr. Archibald Henderson.

History of Agriculture in North Carolina—

Hospital Service in the War Between the States—

Historic Homes, Part VIII: "Bookwood"—Mr. William C. Ervin.

Historic Homes, Part IX: "Creek-Side"—Mr. William C. Ervin.

Shocco and Jones' Springs: Old-fashion Resorts in Warren County  
—Judge Walter A. Montgomery.

History of the Continental Line of North Carolina—Mr. Frank Nash.

Historical Book Reviews will be contributed by Mrs. Nina Holland Covington. These will be reviews of the latest historical works written by North Carolinians.

The Genealogical Department will be continued, with a page devoted to Genealogical Queries and Answers as an aid to genealogical research in the State.

The North Carolina Society Colonial Dames of America will furnish copies of unpublished records for publication THE BOOKLET.

Biographical Sketches will be continued under Mrs. E. E. Moffitt.

Old letters, heretofore unpublished, bearing on the Social Life of the different periods of North Carolina History, will appear hereafter in THE BOOKLET.

This list of subjects may be changed, as circumstances sometimes prevent the writers from keeping their engagements.

The histories of the separate counties will in the future be a special feature of THE BOOKLET. When necessary, an entire issue will be devoted to a paper on one county.

Parties who wish to renew their subscriptions to THE BOOKLET for Vol. XVI are requested to give notice at once.

Many numbers of Volumes I to XVI for sale.

For particulars address

MISS MARY HILLIARD HINTON,

Editor North Carolina Booklet,

"Midway Plantation," Raleigh, N. C.

*The*  
NORTH CAROLINA BOOKLET

---

*"Carolina! Carolina! Heaven's blessings attend her!  
While we live we will cherish, protect and defend her!"*

---

Published by  
THE NORTH CAROLINA SOCIETY  
DAUGHTERS OF THE REVOLUTION

---

The object of THE BOOKLET is to aid in developing and preserving North Carolina History. The proceeds arising from its publication will be devoted to patriotic purposes.

EDITOR.

---

RALEIGH  
COMMERCIAL PRINTING COMPANY  
PRINTERS AND BINDERS

## ADVISORY BOARD OF THE NORTH CAROLINA BOOKLET

MRS. HUBERT HAYWOOD.

MRS. E. E. MOFFITT.

MR. R. D. W. CONNOR.

DR. D. H. HILL.

DR. WILLIAM K. BOYD.

CAPT. S. A. ASHE.

MISS ADELAIDE L. FRIES.

MISS MARTHA HELEN HAYWOOD.

DR. RICHARD DILLARD.

DR. KEMP P. BATTLE.

MR. JAMES SPRUNT.

MR. MARSHALL DELANCEY HAYWOOD

CHIEF JUSTICE WALTER CLARK.

MAJOR W. A. GRAHAM.

DR. CHARLES LEE SMITH.

EDITOR :

MISS MARY HILLIARD HINTON.

BIOGRAPHICAL EDITOR :

MRS. E. E. MOFFITT.

## OFFICERS OF THE NORTH CAROLINA SOCIETY DAUGHTERS OF THE REVOLUTION 1914-1916

REGENT :

MISS MARY HILLIARD HINTON.

VICE-REGENT :

MRS. MARSHALL WILLIAMS.

HONORARY REGENTS :

MRS. E. E. MOFFITT.

MRS. T. K. BRUNER.

RECORDING SECRETARY :

MRS. L. E. COVINGTON.

CORRESPONDING SECRETARY :

MRS. PAUL H. LEE.

TREASURER :

MRS. CHAS. LEE SMITH.

REGISTRAR :

MISS SARAH W. ASHE.

CUSTODIAN OF RELICS :

MRS. JOHN E. RAY.

## CHAPTER REGENTS

Bloomsbury Chapter-----Mrs. HUBERT HAYWOOD, Regent.

Penelope Barker Chapter-----Mrs. PATRICK MATTHEW, Regent.

Sir Walter Raleigh Chapter-----Mrs. I. M. MEEKINS, Regent.

General Francis Nash Chapter-----Miss REBECCA CAMERON, Regent.

Roanoke Chapter-----Mrs. F. M. ALLEN, Regent.

Mary Slocumb Chapter-----Miss GEORGIE HICKS, Regent.

Colonel Thomas Robeson Chapter-----Mrs. ANNIE BUTE, Regent.

Tuscarora Chapter -----Miss ANNIE MONTAGUE, Regent.

FOUNDER OF THE NORTH CAROLINA SOCIETY AND REGENT 1896-1902 :

MRS. SPIER WHITAKER.\*

REGENT 1902 :

MRS. D. H. HILL, SR.†

REGENT 1902-1906 :

MRS. THOMAS K. BRUNER.

REGENT 1906-1910 :

MRS. E. E. MOFFITT.

\*Died November 25, 1911.

†Died December 12, 1904.

# The North Carolina Booklet

---

Vol. XVI

APRIL, 1917

No. 4

---

## General D. H. Hill as a Teacher and Author

---

### An Educational and Literary Review

---

By DR. HENRY ELLIOT SHEPHERD.

---

In a preceding connection I have given a brief account of the work of Gen. D. H. Hill in the educational sphere, my narrative being in large measure drawn from the memory of my youthful experiences as a student at Davidson College and a cadet at the North Carolina Military Institute. Of the results accomplished by General Hill during the last eleven or twelve years of his life, while devoting himself to new fields of labor in Arkansas and in Georgia (1876-1889), I am not able to express a judgment or form an estimate based upon immediate knowledge of the conditions and circumstances which characterized his novel and, as the result proved, his latest phase of educational enterprise. We may rest assured that, despite his gradually failing physical health, the same inflexible purpose, the same heroic ideals, and the same singleness of aim, marked him to the final stage, in September, 1889, when

"Meekly he did resign this earthly load  
Of death called life, which us from life doth sever."

\*The career of Gen. D. H. Hill, as teacher, during the period preceding the War Between the States, falls into three

---

\*In my review of the literary work accomplished by General D. H. Hill, I have drawn both illustrations and comments, almost entirely, from his two distinctive and characteristic productions, "The Sermon on the Mount," and "The Crucifixion." Much that is excellent might have been gathered from "The Land We Love," and "The Southern Home," but I selected the books named as best adapted to the peculiar end I had in view.

well-defined divisions: Professor of Mathematics at Washington College (afterwards Washington and Lee University), from 1849 until 1854; Professor of Mathematics at Davidson College, 1854-1859; Superintendent North Carolina Military Institute, Charlotte, from October, 1859, until April, 1861. He was twenty-eight years of age when he assumed the chair of mathematics at Washington College, and not quite forty, in April, 1861, when he was assigned to the command of the camp of instruction near Raleigh, and was soon to become Colonel of the historic first North Carolina, or Bethel Regiment. In the three educational capacities with which Hill was associated during the eventful years from 1849 to 1861, he was in each instance at the head of the department of mathematics. Yet it would involve a serious error to infer that his power as teacher, his faculty of instruction, was absorbed by this one subject, or expended upon it. There was hardly a feature of the curriculum which he did not touch at some point, and he touched none that he did not illuminate. In his special sphere he was wont to track "suggestion to her inmost cell"; his patience was boundless, and he approached very nearly the lofty standard set up by that famed master of his art, "who taught as if every scholar was the only scholar."

When I withdrew from the Military Institute, in order to enter the University of Virginia, during the summer of 1860, he gave me a most kindly and cordial letter of commendation to the faculty, concluding with this significant sentence: "Cadet Shepherd has a strong passion for literature and the languages, and no taste whatever for mathematics." That I never developed a faculty for his specialty, can in no sense be laid to his account. He was the most laborious, exact, lucid, of teachers, and while I have oftentimes deplored my weakness, I was never able to triumph over the strong propensity of temperament, even under the guidance of so masterful an instructor. To that end I could have subscribed myself, as Macaulay did when writing to his parents during his undergraduate days at Cambridge, "Your miser-



able and mathematical son." Hill has assumed a justly acquired rank, not only among the foremost interpreters of his science in the educational world of the South, but in the country, without regard to geographical or sectional limitations. His treatise upon Algebra, published about -----, 1857, was compared in its luminous method and skill in demonstration, to the work of Euler,\* whose fame is not preserved alone in the esoteric circles of a mathematical cult, but is perpetuated in his native city on the Rhine by visible memorials, attesting alike the grateful appreciation and abiding reverence of the community from which he went forth into remote and barbarous empires, carrying with him the glory of Basel and the inspiration of his chosen science. Yet, in the State of his adoption, with which his name and fame are forever blended, no monumental stone, no image wrought in marble or bronze, not even a modest, half-concealed tablet, in some niche in a chapel wall, recalls the genius, suggests the heroism, or intimates in temperate phrases, the unsurpassed idealism which crowned the life of D. H. Hill. I have at times indulged myself in innocent speculation with reference to the possibilities of Hill in the higher ranges of modern mathematical development, in conditions more congenial to his tastes and sympathies, as well as richer in inspiration to his native powers, than the sad mechanic exercise of unfolding the elements of algebra and geometry to callow and fledgling lads, many of whom, as attested by himself, had never

---

\*In the ninth volume of the *Encyclopædia Britannica* there may be found an admirable outline of the life of Euler (1716-1783), as well as an accurate and discriminating estimate of his rank as a mathematician. His Algebra, to which Hill's has been compared, although published in 1770, still maintains its place as a work of authority. His varied researches in his special field, embraced from sixty to eighty quarto volumes. From Russia, Prussia and France he received marked honor and distinctions, in royal as well as scientific circles. More than this, Euler was endowed with that versatility of intellect which was characteristic of D. H. Hill, and in addition to his mathematical attainments, was an accomplished classical and literary scholar. In his native city of Basel there is a leading hotel which perpetuates his name. Thus far no monument or memorial recalls the genius and the achievements of the man who twice rescued the Southern Confederacy, not from imminent peril alone, but from seemingly inevitable destruction.

mastered the fundamental laws of simple arithmetic. Divested of the grievous daily burden of empirical teaching, might he not have attained the transcendental heights of the school of Higher Algebra, and entered into that mystic fellowship, of which in English speaking lands Sylvester and Cayley were the acknowledged oracles? Had he been able to cast off the incubus of class-room routine, crushing nervous energy and absorbing mental vitality, might he not, in his mathematical sphere, have been one of those chosen and rare spirits whose high vocation is

"To follow knowledge like a sinking star,  
Beyond the utmost bound of human thought."

Major Hill combined with his native reserve and dignity a strong element of caustic wit, as well as a keen appreciation of the ludicrous and the humorous. Upon a certain occasion a somewhat venturesome student wrote ASS in large chalk letters upon the back of a class-mate, who was absorbed in his demonstration at the blackboard. His quick eye at once observed it, and he remarked, "Mr. ----- somebody has been writing *his* name on *your* back." The rift within the mathematical lute was immediately healed, and tranquility reigned supreme. Upon another occasion he said to a student who was transcending the limits of propriety: "Mr. ----- if you do not conduct yourself properly I shall be obliged to put the door between us." His teaching was ideal, his discipline unsurpassed. Nothing was too minute to escape his vigilance, or so trivial as to be unworthy of his regard. He knew the weakness and the strength of every pupil, and as his classes never exceeded a rational number, he was acquainted with the special characteristics, mental and moral, of the crude and self-appreciative lads who were entrusted to his keeping.\* He understood our shallow intellects, our minimum of attainments, and his teaching descended to the

---

\*I have learned from an authoritative source that during his association with Davidson College, 1854-59, Major Hill introduced a resolution, which was adopted, requiring the meetings of the faculty to be opened with prayer.

plane of our merely dawning or embryonic stage of development. With the mode of instruction by lectures, which obtained in the University of Virginia, he had no sympathy, or hardly a sentiment of toleration, for he understood only too thoroughly the dissipation of mental and physical energy which it involved, under the conditions that existed in the prevailing system of elementary education. "Yes," he said in one of his emphatic moods, "that's the way at the University of Virginia; everything done by lectures." I have, in another connection, pointed out the essential fact, that although Major Hill was the chief of the mathematical department, both at Davidson College and at the Military Institute, his genius as a teacher was not expended in that sphere alone. On the contrary, nearly every feature of the curriculum was touched by his pervading influence. He was what Tennyson would have described as a "diffusive power." Above all, his far-ranging vitality of intellect was brought to bear upon the interpretation and elucidation of Holy Scripture. His daily comments upon the Psalms, the Gospels, or the Epistles, are wrought into my memory; despite the process of the suns, and the increasing years, I can, in part, recall them as clearly and vividly as if I had listened to them but yesterday. To the mind of D. H. Hill a system of education which knew not God and did not rest upon a moral foundation as its inspiring principle, would have seemed not an anomaly, but a monstrosity, contemplated from the viewpoint of religion or that of reason and logic. The Book of Psalms was apparently his favorite field of research and interpretation; his minute and critical study of the master lyrics revealed itself whenever he read them in the morning or evening service. His wide range of scientific attainment stood him in good stead, and his illustrations were drawn with admirable judgment from the works of nature as exhibited in astronomy or displayed in the lowliest manifestations of creative power, the lily-of-the-valley, or a modest violet, beneath some mossy stone, half hidden from the eye. Yet his two distinctive treatises, "A

Consideration of the Sermon on the Mount," and "The Crucifixion," upon which his fame as an author will principally abide, are devoted to the central and surpassing fact of Scripture history, the nature of the kingdom of Christ, as unfolded in his inaugural discourse; and the sublime tragedy of his atoning death, his analysis of which I regard as his crown of glory in the province of Scriptural exegesis, as well as in the sphere of literary achievement. It is an almost unknown or unimagined circumstance, even for the boldest or most irreverent student, to venture on a liberty with the Major or to propose quizzes or "catch" questions, in order to test his knowledge in regard to abstruse and subtle problems in mathematics or in physical science. I can recall but a single exception to this prevailing rule, that of Cadet Winslow, who entered the lists against him upon a point involving the relation of wind to light, but the experiment, so far as I am aware, was never repeated. The same spirit did not obtain in student circles at the University of Virginia, and I am familiar with more than one instance in which a professor of languages was brought to grief by his own pupils upon questions of translation, of idiom, and of construction. Not so with D. H. Hill in his special sphere. Our feeling of confidence was absolute, and the most youthful cadet felt assured that while mathematics "was his forte," "his foible was omniscience." During the period that Major Hill was in charge of the Military Institute (October, 1859, to April, 1861), there was but a single commencement celebrated, July, 1860. A year passed, commander and cadets were in the field, and his relation to the institution was never resumed with the restoration of peace. The commencement exercises were held in the Presbyterian Church, Major Hill presiding. Thomas L. Clingman had been invited to deliver the formal address, but he failed to appear, and in his stead we listened to an admirable, informal discussion of the school, its work and its power for noble and beneficent ends, by Judge James W. Osborne, of Charlotte. Orations were delivered by Cadet

Houston B. Lowrie, who fell at Sharpsburg; Cadet Graham, of Alabama; and by the author of this narrative. Lowrie's theme was a eulogy upon North Carolina, having special reference to three of her sons, Macon, Gaston and Dobbin. The oration of Cadet Graham was patriotic in its scope; the third speaker devoted himself to the literature of Scotland, his principal characters being Burns and Sir Walter Scott. Despite the invincible aversion I cherished for the peculiar science in which Major Hill excelled every teacher with whom I was brought into contact, I have never failed to regard him as one of the vital forces, one of the purest inspirations that quickened the crude and inchoate life of my boyhood, both at Davidson College and at Charlotte. With the attitude of Sir William Hamilton in reference to the disciplinary value of the mathematics, I have never been in accord. My weakness revealed itself in an inability to overcome the strong propensity of nature. Major Hill was in no sense accountable for my failure to develop an affection even for *his* algebra, with its touches of Southern fire and sentiment encroaching upon the calmness and serenity of abstract reasoning and subtle generalization. Though I stood at the pole of contrast in all my predilections and affinities, in the light of broadening years, and after having seen and heard such modern oracles of the kingdom of mathematics as Sylvester, Cayley and Kelvin, I rank him higher than ever in the foremost ranges of his chosen field. It has been my specific aim thus far to make clear his right to an undisputed place among the leaders of our armies, and the guides of our intellectual development in the South. In each of these relations, soldier and teacher, his fame has passed beyond the region of controversy. The boldest iconoclast would no longer venture to question his title, or impeach his two-fold claim to assured renown.

It may be fairly assumed that if Hill had never devoted himself to the art of war, had never become a professional soldier, but on the contrary had dedicated his energies to literature as a calling, a life work, he would have won an



assured rank among American authors. I use the term *American* advisedly, for his reputation, I am confident, would not have been circumscribed by sectional or geographical limitations. It may, upon first reflection, create a feeling of surprise, that a soldier by profession, like Hill, should have entered the field of authorship, and that, above all, he should have selected as the most congenial sphere for the exercise of his gifts, the department of scriptural exegesis.

Among the most notable contributions ever made by a Southern layman in this department, was the work of George E. Badger, of North Carolina, issued in 1849, during the "Anglo-Catholic" or Bishop Ives controversy, then moving towards its critical stage of development. The "examination" of Mr. Badger combines the subtlety of Newman with the far-reaching and critical acquirement of Bishop Lightfoot. It may be assumed without fear of exaggeration, that no layman of the present age in any Protestant communion could rival or reproduce this work of the jurist and statesman; and even in the clerical order, it would be a difficult task to suggest his peer in acuteness of intellect or clearness and skill in presentation of the truth. One who is familiar with the genesis and evolution of the Hill family might be disposed to attribute our hero's predilection for theological investigation and scriptural analysis to ancestral influences and rigid Calvinistic training. Apart from purely religious forces and tendencies developed by education, there was apparently a literary strain or element inherent in the blood of the Hills. This claim of transmitted faculty on the part of D. H. Hill is confirmed by the valuable contribution made to our revolutionary history by his grandfather, Colonel William Hill, in his "Narrative of the Campaign of 1780, in South Carolina, Under General Thomas Sumter, Together with an Account of the Battle of Musgrave's Mill, and the King's Mountain Expedition." This work may have been resting in the memory of D. H. Hill when he introduced as corroborative testimony a reference to the battle of King's Mountain. "The Crucifixion," page 192.

The literary susceptibility, even in the form of poetry, may reveal itself in natures nurtured in the most austere modes of religious culture. A vein of poetic sensibility has been traced in the creations of Calvin, and in his years of dawn, D. H. Hill at times was wont "to meditate the thankless muse."

No purer or more vigorous English ever flowed from the pen of Hill than may be found in his contributions to the editorial columns of "The Southern Home," when his spirit was touched and kindled by some exalted and inspiring issue. Above all, does this generalization hold good of the editorial elicited by the formal dedication of the Foley statue of Jackson in Richmond during the month of October, 1875.

We turn now to a specific analysis of the two works upon which in the sphere of literature at least, his fame will abide. Each of these, "A Consideration of the Sermon on the Mount," 1858, and "The Crucifixion," 1859, was probably written during the Davidson period of the author's life, that is, between 1854 and 1859. "The Crucifixion" appeared as a serial, being published in the weekly issues of the "North Carolina Presbyterian" at Fayetteville, during the year 1858-1859. I recall with perfect distinctness the interest that the gradually expanding work inspired and the animated discussion which was sometimes evoked by the views of Major Hill in regard to certain aspects of the consummate tragedy involved in the death of our Lord. In its present form it must have been issued not far from the date at which he assumed charge of the Military Institute, September or October, 1859. I am at a loss to understand why the preface contains no reference to the circumstances, in part, at least, of its original appearance. There is a pathetic interest associated with the first of the two books—the commentary upon the Sermon on the Mount. The origin and inspiration of the work are seemingly revealed in the dedication to the memory of two of his children who lie in the little cemetery at Davidson College, where both father and mother now rest beside them. The

spirit of the dead broods over the volume—it is, in a measure, an elegy in prose. Thus runs the dedication: “To The Memory of Morrison and Willie Hill, With The Prayerful Hope That This Little Book May Do Some of That Good Which Their Fond Parents Had Hoped That They Would Have Done Had They Been Spared to Labor in the Vineyard of the Lord.” It is evident from the tenor of the language, that these two “little ones” had been devoted in thought and purpose to the ministry of the gospel. They were designed to follow in the footsteps of their maternal grandfather, and one of them bore the name of his ancestor who outlived him for nearly, if not quite, a third of a century. No feature of General Hill’s character was more intensely developed than his affection for his children; it pervaded every phase of his nature while they were with him, and when God took them, he dedicated the creations of his genius and scholarship, as a monument to their memory. That the two works, devoted to the treatment of scriptural themes, were the productions of a layman, was a circumstance which from some points of view might tend rather to contribute to their popularity than to detract from it. The ventures of laic skill and scholarship in this field have, in notable instances, been crowned with assured success. Wilberforce’s “Practical View of Christianity” will readily suggest itself, and one of our author’s special topics, the Sermon on the Mount, had been the subject of a commentary by Henry Thornton, M. P., in 1840, while Hill was a cadet at West Point. The labors of the non-clerical author in the Biblical sphere, will be accepted by many as the result of genuine piety and consecration of spirit, not as a mere compliance with an official or professional obligation. No man who is associated with the development of theological opinion in Scotland during the nineteenth century exerted a more potent influence than Erskine of Linlathen, a mere layman. All the essential conditions were combined in Hill—the fervor of his Scottish ancestry, a moral temperament that was never invaded by the spectre of doubt, a subtlety of judgment stimulated by his rigorous mathematical training, and a range of

historical and literary acquirement, unequalled by any of the foremost soldiers in the armies of the South. More than this, his acquaintance with Scripture was minute, exact, comprehensive. The Psalms were his chosen field above all, a circumstance which possibly finds its explanation in the ancient and now unhappily obsolete custom in Presbyterian households, of requiring them to be committed to memory and recited by the children. The treatise upon the Sermon on the Mount contains 282 pages, and is topical in arrangement, rather than characterized by formal division into chapters. Every essential feature of our Lord's inaugural discourse is reviewed as it presents itself in the order adopted by the Divine speaker, who was unfolding the vital principles which were to guide the destinies of the kingdom that He came to establish. The formalism of the Pharisees, the Lord's prayer, censoriousness, covetousness, needless anxiety, every phase of the unique discourse is discussed in its proper relation, with a lucidity and perspicuity of language which reveals the mathematical culture of the author, as well as a simplicity and directness that appeals to the humblest intelligence. No trace of scholastic pedantry or esoteric method, is discernible at any point in the expanding thought of the commentator. At the same time, his theological equipment is ample, his knowledge comprehensive and critical, his English vigorous and undefiled. Technical terms drawn from the nomenclature of the schools do not darken the understanding of the unlettered intellect; the book, in Baconian phrase, comes home "to men's business and bosoms." Not the least of the sources of its power lies in the fact that it was not the product of a mind nurtured in seclusion or bred in the cloister, but the creation of one who blended with exact attainment a knowledge of the world of realities, who had tasted the sweetness of home, the bitterness of war, had borne sore trials, had "seen life thoroughly and seen it whole." Each of the two works now under review is a suggestive illustration of the intellectual and ancestral influences by whose agency its author was developed. The critical student will not fail to

note that the literary illustrations, varied as is their range, are drawn in great measure from the masters of English thought and expression during the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, or from those who do not descend to a later period than the earlier decades of the nineteenth. There is hardly to be discovered a reference to an historian later than Macaulay, Arnold, Niebuhr, or Sir Archibald Alison, or a poet who is subsequent to the time of Byron and Southey. In his literary record, no allusion appears to the mighty company of master spirits, Wordsworth, Keats, Shelley, Tennyson, Browning, all of whom were contemporaries, and one of whom outlived him, being laid in the Poet's Corner, three years after Hill had been borne by loving hands to his grave among his children at Davidson College. To the lover of literature in our modern day, it sounds as if an echo of the vanished past had fallen upon our ears as we read Hill's elaborate quotation from the "Botanic Garden," page 24, published in 1791. The author was the grandfather of the renowned naturalist whose name is for all time associated with the doctrine of evolution. Another illustration of the strong literary conservatism which marked our ancestors of the South may be discovered in Hill's quotation from Pollok's "Course of Time," page 108, and from Young's "Night Thoughts," page 99. Yet each of these was a favorite classic in the homes of our forefathers, and rare editions, which survived the desolation of war, may be found on ancient shelves in many a Virginia and Carolina manor unto this day. In the quotation from Pope's "Universal Prayer," page 44, we have, it may be, an example of the dominant classical spirit transmitted from the eighteenth century, or the survival of maternal influence in the development of literary tendency. It has been explained that Mrs. Solomon Hill was thoroughly at home with this master light of our Augustan age. The quotations from Shakespeare are rare and isolated. "The Crucifixion" suggests a possible preference for "King Lear," among the creations of the sovereign dramatist. Among the leaders in the sphere of fiction, Hill's comments, page 53, indicate a



strong aversion to the heroes who have been wrought into form by the genius of Charles Dickens, his dislike being justified by the salutary and admirable reason that "they have no regard for the Sabbath, none for the Bible, none for the preached word."\* This distrust of the literature embodied

---

\*In order to illustrate the rigid views entertained by men of the school to which Hill and Jackson belonged, in regard to the sanctity of the Sabbath, as contrasted with the laxity that prevails in our modern life and practice, I insert the following extract from a letter written by General Jackson five days before his brilliant flank movement against Hooker at Chancellorsville, May 2, 1863. The letter was one of the last that came from his hand. In less than two weeks from the day on which it was written, Jackson died at Guinea Station, Virginia, May 10, 1863. The letter was addressed to his friend and colleague, Colonel J. T. L. Preston, of Lexington, Virginia :

"Near Fredericksburg, April 27th, 1863.

Dear Colonel :

I am much gratified to see that you are one of the delegates to the General Assembly of our Church, and I write to express the hope that something may be accomplished by you at the meeting of that influential body towards repealing the law requiring our mails to be carried on the Christian Sabbath. Recently, I received a letter from a member of Congress, expressing the hope that the House of Representatives would act upon the subject during its present session; and from the mention made of Col. Chilton and Mr. Curry, of Alabama, I infer that they are members of the Committee which recommend the repeal of the law. A few days since I received a very gratifying letter from Mr. Curry, which was entirely voluntary on his part, as I was a stranger to him and there had been no previous correspondence between us. His letter is of a cheering character, and he takes occasion to say that divine laws can be violated with impunity neither by governments nor individuals. I regret to say that he is fearful that the anxiety of members to return home, and the press of other business, will prevent the desired action this session. I have said thus much in order that you may see that congressional action is to be looked for at the next Congress, and hence the importance that Christians act promptly, so that our legislators may see the current of public opinion before they take up the subject. I hope and pray that such may be our country's sentiment upon this and kindred subjects, that our statesmen will see their way clearly. Now appears to me an auspicious time for action, as our people are looking to God for assistance.

Very truly your friend,

T. J. JACKSON."

The General Assembly of the Southern Presbyterian Church met at Columbia, S. C., on the seventh of May, and three days after Jackson entered into rest. At this time General Hill was in command of the Department of North Carolina. He would have been heartily in accord with the views of General Jackson in reference to the observance of the Sabbath. Upon the very day on which this letter was written, Hooker began his Chancellorsville campaign, a large part of his army crossing the Rappahannock at Kelly's Ford, April 27th, 1863.

in the novel and the romance, reveals itself in the letters of Robert E. Lee, and of his father, each of whom warns his children against the dissipation of moral, as well as mental energy involved in the reading of fiction. So far as we are enabled to form an intelligent judgment of our author's literary tendencies, he was not, even in early years, a devotee of fiction. The most notable exception to this comprehensive statement is probably to be found in the historical romances of Sir Walter Scott. Yet in this special field we find him at one with Guizot and Ruskin in the conviction that Scott had not succeeded in his endeavors to recreate the past and to present not an idealized portraiture, but the very "form and pressure" of the vanished ages. The range of illustration drawn from history is far-reaching in character. The eras in the development of the modern world are, above all, the fearful carnival of crime and blood involved in the French Revolution, the days of the St. Bartholomew, the critical era of Henry VIII, that of the first Napoleon, the troublous time of the War of The Roses. These, however, by no means exhaust his fertility; he may be said to take all historic knowledge as his province. In the light of present complications with the Republic of Mexico, Hill's comments, page 159, upon its former crises and revolutions, its episodes of anarchy and its intervals of calm, will prove rich in suggestion to those discriminating minds which interpret the present in the retrospect of the past. One supreme motive and aim pervades the work, fashions its form and determines its spirit—to "assert eternal providence and justify the ways of God to man." To this pre-eminent purpose of vindicating the Divine attitude, as revealed in the evolution of our race in its varying stages, his wealth of illustration is dedicated. It need hardly be intimated that from their first to their final utterance, a tone of invincible orthodoxy is characteristic of both of these works. No shadow of doubt seems ever for a moment to have fallen upon the spirit of their author. Had the Son of Man come, He would have found faith upon

the earth concretely illustrated in the life and walk of D. H. Hill. In an age when the foundations of belief are apparently dissolving under the incubus of an all-prevailing unrest, and the ceaseless "questioning of invisible things," the contrast exhibited in the attitude of Hill is grateful, as well as inspiring, like a voice calling from the vanished days of unchallengeable trust in the eternal verities. There is the absolute confidence, the urgent warning directed against needless anxiety, the "taking thought," which conveys a possible reflection upon the Divine omniscience and the Divine providence. When we recall our author's broad and accurate acquaintance with the classic literature of the Elizabethan era, one almost awaits to hear him cite Shakespeare and Bacon, in confirmation of his interpretation of the expression. Hill was familiar with the fact, known to every student of English, that the contemporary masters of our language, in many well defined instances, present the most simple and satisfactory rendering of seemingly obscure passages in the standard versions of Holy Scripture. His varied and troublous life in war, and during the saturnalian period of reconstruction, afforded him an admirable field for the application of his own teachings in the daily grapple with new problems, novel conditions, a new earth, not a new heaven, into which fate had cast him. Yet, unto the end, his faith failed not, and he endured as seeing Him who is invisible. When we recall the ceaseless and multiform activity which was characteristic of Hill and his technical training as a professional soldier, it is difficult to explain the process by which he acquired so broad and accurate a knowledge of literature and history, in nearly all their stages save the periods that are subsequent to the first half of the nineteenth century. In this regard he displays a striking resemblance to his favorite historian, for Hill, like Macaulay, was in the essential features of his intellectual development, a type and in large measure a product, of the culture and ideals which prevailed during our Augustan age, when Addison, Swift, Steele and Pope were the recognized and indisputable standards. To the

modern reader, the reference to Cudworth, page 136, seems an echo from worlds no longer realized, but the citation serves to illustrate Hill's versatile knowledge and his discursive ranging among the forgotten masters of the seventeenth century. The introduction of the Swedish hero, Gustavus Adolphus, page 170, is rich in historic suggestion, for Gustavus presents a striking resemblance in genius and in character, in life and in death, to our own Stonewall Jackson. The supreme military career of each extended over the same length of years: Gustavus from 1630 to 1632; Jackson from 1861 to 1863; both died at nearly the same age; Jackson at 39; Gustavus at 38, and both fell in the moment of victory, the one at Lutzen, the other at Chancellorsville. Had Hill's book been written five or six years later, his eye would have recognized the parallel, and his hand would have traced it in every one of its distinctive features. On page 212, we read the reference to Bishop Beveridge, the subject of Browning's ghastly witticism, but turned to good account by our author, who in common with nearly every scholar of the South during the past generation, had no part in the poetry of Browning.

As the work expands, we cannot fail to observe how effectually the mathematical habitude of the author preserves its unity and guards it from unmethodical or desultory treatment. The element of system entered into every detail of his daily life. The book abounds in passages whose conciseness and lucidity adapt them to the purpose of quotation, so that we cannot forbear to draw from its varied wealth in the hope of rendering it, at least in a measure, familiar to the student of his life, who has been accustomed to contemplate him principally, if not in every sense, from the viewpoint of his genius as a soldier and his career in the armies of the Confederacy. I am endeavoring to demonstrate that his character and his achievement, if faithfully scrutinized, will reveal a literary and scholarly feature, not only worthy of critical analysis, but contributing in no small measure to the "eternity of his fame." In the light of contemporary development in the sphere of education, Hill's comments, page

228, assume a peculiar interest: "To the contaminating power of sympathy with evil doers, is to be ascribed the awful depravity of large cities. Hence, too, the low standard of morals among soldiers and sailors. Hence, also, the greater amount of wickedness in State Universities and in colleges overflowing with numbers, than in those less known and less celebrated." During the ten years that Hill was associated with Washington College and with Davidson College as professor of mathematics (1849-1859), the numerical attendance in either probably did not exceed one hundred students. He spoke from the viewpoint of his own experience, and his judgment is amply sustained by the records of that period, as well as by the living voices of many who bear in memory the academic life of the South during the years that preceded the coming of the conflict which destroyed the continuity of educational development. Nor was there more thorough and admirable teaching, though its range was restricted, to be found in that day than was received in these two modest and unambitious colleges, the one encompassed by the mountain walls of Virginia, the other remote, difficult of access, and nursing its strength in tranquil solitude.

On page 200, we are met by a passage which seems almost an echo of one of Newman's Oxford sermons. Despite the likeness, no two characters were ever marked by more sharply defined antitheses than D. H. Hill and the Anglo-Catholic leader. "How cheering and comforting it is to know that God is more ready to send this renewing, sanctifying, interceding Spirit, than parents are to give good things to their children. Here is the great encouragement to prayer—the promise of the Spirit. We are dark, ignorant, short-sighted, and know not how to frame our petitions aright. He has all wisdom and will enlighten our understandings. Our hearts are cold and dead, but He will give them warmth and life. God, because of our sins, 'has covered Himself with a thick cloud, that our prayers should not pass through.' But when His Spirit has enabled us to believe on His Son, He will say: 'I have blotted out, as a thick cloud, thy transgressions, and



as a cloud thy sins; return unto me, for I have redeemed thee.' Our prayer will then be unto thee, O Lord, in an acceptable time, 'and God, even our own God, shall bless us.' " On page 8, we have an illustration drawn from Hill's memories of his experiences in Mexico. "Let the soldier be too proud to study the principles of military science, and he will be but too likely to imitate the examples of one of the mushroom generals of the Mexican war, and *place his ditch on the wrong side of the fortification.*" The reference is to General Gideon J. Pillow, and the celebrated entrenchment at Camargo. At a later period, Hill did not hesitate to apply the same unsparing criticism to the "mushroom" type of generals developed during the War between the States.

The tone of fervid piety which, at every point, pervades the work, is a grateful contrast to the prevailing spirit in the same sphere during the contemporary age. It is inspiring to be carried back, even for an hour, into a realm of thought in which faith reigns supreme, and where the mere suggestion of doubt has apparently never entered. The same attitude reveals itself in the comments on page 69. "The command to 'pray always' implies that the heart may be lifted up in secret devotion amidst the most pressing duties of active life. Still, all should have and all might have special seasons of private prayer. Colonel Gardiner could find such seasons amidst the exciting scenes of civil war and domestic dissension. Washington could find such on his most arduous and active campaigns. David could find such even when hunted down by his enemies. Above all, the Son of God, when engaged in His glorious mission on earth, could find time to spend whole nights in secret prayer. No man can say that he is more diligently or more usefully employed than were Gardiner, Washington and our blessed Redeemer. Let no one then dare to say that he has no time for secret prayer." Had this passage been written in later years, Jackson would have been added to this enumeration of generals who have glorified God by lives consecrated to His service in secret prayer.

## The Voyage of Verrazzano

---

### The First Exploration of the North Carolina Coast by Europeans

---

By R. D. W. CONNOR,  
Secretary of the North Carolina Historical Commission.

---

The first European to visit, explore, and describe the coast of North Carolina was Giovanni da Verrazzano, a Florentine navigator in the service of France. It is true some historians suppose that the Cabots preceded Verrazzano to this region by more than a quarter of a century; but the voyages of the Cabots are involved in so much obscurity and present so many points for controversy that it is impossible to ascertain with any degree of certainty just what parts of North America they visited. It is doubtful, to say the least, whether or not their explorations brought them as far south as our latitude; at any rate no report of their explorations describing the country and its people is now extant. Verrazzano, on the contrary, submitted to the King of France, a long and detailed report of his discoveries, dated July 8, 1524, which is the earliest known description of the coast of the United States. He coasted from Cape Fear to Newfoundland, and his account of the country and its people is one of the most interesting documents that has come down to us from the era of discovery. And yet, strange as it may seem, his exploits have almost entirely escaped the attention of North Carolina historians. Williamson and Martin dismiss his voyage with scant notice, while Hawks, Wheeler, Moore, and Ashe ignore it altogether. It is true his discoveries led to no settlements; nevertheless they form an important link in the chain of discoveries which were slowly but gradually revealing to Europe the truth about the New World; and as his report was included by Hakluyt in his "Divers Voyages," in 1582, it

probably was not without influence in turning the attention of Sir Walter Raleigh toward America as a field for colonization. I propose, therefore, to relate the story of this first visit of Europeans to the shores of North Carolina.

The story of the great voyage of Columbus in 1492 was heard with wonder and delight in France and in England, but these feelings were promptly turned into a feeling of disgust at the cupidity of Spain and Portugal in laying claim to all the undiscovered regions of the earth and at the zeal with which Pope Alexander VI hastened to confirm their pretensions. France and England, however, were not prepared to admit the Spanish and Portuguese titles. "If Father Adam has left the earth to Spain and Portugal," said Francis I of France, "let them show me the will." In the course of a few years, therefore, French and English ships were sailing the waters of the Atlantic far and wide disputing the claims of Spain and Portugal and taking possession of various portions of the New World in the names of their sovereigns.

The first French expedition sent to the New World under royal auspices was the expedition of Verrazzano in 1524. But little is known of Verrazzano's career. He was born in Florence about the year 1470, and at an early age entered the maritime service of France. He seems to have performed for France about the same kind of service, though perhaps not so effectively, that Hawkins and Drake performed for England. We hear of him first as a French corsair ravaging the possessions of Spain and Portugal in the East Indies and the West Indies. On one of his privateering expeditions, 1522, he captured the rich treasure ship which Cortez had dispatched from Mexico to Spain laden with the vast spoils of the Montezuma. It is estimated that this prize yielded gold and silver bullion worth more than one and a half million dollars.

But the daring Florentine was not merely a corsair. The next year he turned his attention, for awhile at least, from privateering to the work of scientific exploration. King Francis fitted out for him four ships with which "to discover

new lands by the ocean.”<sup>1</sup> A storm drove him with two of these vessels, the *Norman* and the *Dauphine*, to seek refuge in a port in Brittany; what became of the other two we do not know. Having repaired the damages sustained from the storm, Verrazzano made a successful descent upon the coast of Spain from which the king derived some profit. Then with the *Dauphine* alone, he says, “we determined to make discoverie of new Countries, to prosecute the navigation we had already begun.” His purpose was to find a way to Cathay (China) by a westward route. Accordingly, with a crew of fifty men, well provided with “victuals, weapons, and other ship munition” for an eight-month voyage, he set sail January 17, 1524, from a “dishabited rocke by the isle of Madera” and turned his prow toward the unknown world.

For twenty-five days Verrazzano’s little caravel sped along for 500 leagues before “a faire Easterly wind,” but on the twenty-sixth day he was “overtaken with as sharp and terrible a tempest as ever saylers suffered.” Weathering this storm, as he said “with the divine helpe and mercifull assistance of Almighty God, and the goodnesse of our shippe, accompanied with the good happe of her fortunate name,” he again fell in with a “prosperous winde,” and pursued his course west by north for a little more than 400 leagues. When in the thirty-fourth parallel of latitude, he reached a low-lying coast, “a newe land,” he declares, “never before scene of any man either ancient or moderne.” This landfall was off the coast of what is now North Carolina near Cape Fear.

Perceiving by “the great fires” on shore that the country was inhabited, Verrazzano followed the coast southward for fifty leagues in search of “some convenient Harbrough wherein to anchor and have knowledge of the place.” Failing in his search, he says, “we resolved to returne backe againe towards the North, where wee found our selves troubled with the like difficultie. . . . At length being in despaire to

---

<sup>1</sup>Quotations in this article from Verrazzano’s report are from Hakluyt’s translation printed in his “Voyages,” reprint of 1810, Vol. 3.

finde any Porte, wee cast anchor upon the coast, and sent our Boate to shore, where we saw great store of people which came to the Sea side: and seeing us approach, they fled away, and sometimes would stand still and looke backe, beholding us with great admiration; but afterwards being animated and assured with signes that we made them, some of them came hard to the Sea side, seeming to rejoyce very much at the sight of us, and marveling greatly at our apparel, shape and whitenesse, shewed us by sundry signes where we might most commodiously come aland with our Boate, offering us also of their victuals to eate."

Thus for the first time the red men of our Carolina coast came in contact with the white race. It was a wonderful occasion for both. And yet, how much more wonderful it would seem if the red men could have imitated the example of their pale-face visitors and left for us their impressions of the strangers as the white men did of them. In Verrazzano's report of his voyage we have the earliest description of these natives that has come down to us. That some of his statements are erroneous is not to be marveled at; rather ought we to wonder that, considering all the circumstances, his observations of these people, as strange to him as he was to them, should approach so nearly to accuracy. Here is what he says of them:

"Now I wil briefly declare to your Maiestie their life and maners, as farre as we could have notice thereof: These people goe altogether naked, except only that they cover their privie parts with certaine skins of beasts like unto Marterns, which they fasten unto a narrow girdle made of grasse very artificially wrought, hanged about with tayles of divers other beastes, which round about their bodies hang dangling downe to their knees. Some of them weare garlands of byrdes feathers. The people are of colour russett, and not much unlike the saracens: their hayre blacke, thicke and not very long, which they tye together in a knot behind and weare it like a little taile. They are well featured in their limbes, of meane stature,



and commonly somewhat bigger than we: broad breasted, strong armed, their legs and other parts of their bodies well fashioned, and they are disfigured in nothing, saving that they have somewhat broade visages, and yet not all of them: for we saw many of them wel favoured, having blacke and great eyes, with a cheerefull and steady looke, not strong of body, yet sharpe witted, nymble and exceeding great runners, as farre as we could learne by experience, and in those two last qualities they are like to the people of the East partes of the world, and especially to them of the uttermost parts of China. We could not learne of this people, their maner of living, nor their particular customs, by reason of the short abode we made on the shore, our company being but small, and our ship ryding farre off in the Sea.”

After these observations on the people Verrazzano describes the country itself. It should be borne in mind that Verrazzano thought that he was on the coast of Cathay and therefore imagines that the forests which he saw at a distance would be not “altogether voyd of drugs or spicery, and other riches of golde, seeing the colour of the land doth much argue it.” Such errors are common to the narratives of most of the early explorers who, thinking themselves in an oriental country, attribute to America many of the features and products of the Orient. So does Verrazzano in the following description of the Carolina coast—the first description of this region ever written—fall into similar errors. He says:

“The shoare is all covered with small sand, and so ascendeth upwards for the space of 15. foote, rising in forme of litle hils about 50. paces broad. And sayling forwards, we found certaine small Rivers and armes of the Sea, that fall downe by certaine creekes, washing the shoare on both sides as the coast lyeth. And beyond this we saw the open Countrey rising in height above the sandie shoare with many faire fields and plaines, full of mightie great woods, some very thicke, and some thinne, replenished with divers sorts of trees, as pleasant and delectable to behold, as is possible to imagine.

And your Maiestie may not thinke that these are like the woods of Hereynia or the wilde deserts of Tartary, and the Northerne coasts full of fruitless trees: But they are full of Palme trees, Bay trees, and high Cypresse trees, and many other sortes of trees unknownen in Europe, which yeeld most sweete savours farre from the shoare, the propertie whereof we could not learne from the cause aforesaid,<sup>2</sup> and not for any difficulty to passe through the woods, seeing they are not so thicke but that a man may passe through them. Neither doe we thinke that they, partaking of the East world round about them, are altogether voyd of drugs or spicery, and other riches of golde, seeing the colour of the land doth so much argue it. And the lande is full of many beastes, as Stags, Deere, and Hares, and likewise of Lakes and Pooles of fresh water, with great plentie of Fowles, convenient for all kinde of pleasant game. This land is in latitude 34. degrees,<sup>3</sup> with good and wholesome ayre, temperate, betweene hot and colde, no vehement windes doe blowe in those Regions, and those that doe commonly reigne in those coasts, are the Northwest and West windes in the summer season, (in the beginning whereof we were there) the skie cleere and faire with very little raine: and if at any time the ayre be cloudie and mistie with the Southerne winde, immediately it is dissolved and waxeth cleere and fayre againe."

Sailing northward, Verrazzano found the coast "to trend toward the East" and "saw every where very great fires, by reason of the multitude of the inhabitants." An incident soon occurred, tragic enough in its possibilities as viewed by the horrified Frenchmen, but merely amusing as we now read it in Verrazzano's narrative, which shows how difficult it was for the visitors and the natives to understand each other at their first contact. Verrazzano tells the story in the following passage:

---

<sup>2</sup>"By reason of the short abode we made on the shore, our company being but small, and our ship ryding farre off in the Sea."

<sup>3</sup>A few miles south of Wilmington.

“We departed from this place, still running along the coast, which we found to trend toward the East, & we saw every where great fires, by reason of the multitude of the inhabitants. While we rode on that coast, partly because it had no harborough, and for that we wanted water, we sent our boat ashore with 25. men: where by reason of great and continuall waves that beat against the shoare, being an open Coast, without succour, none of our men could possibly goe ashore without loosing our boate. Wee saw there many people which came unto the Shoare, making divers signes of friendship, and shewing that they were content we should come aland, and by trial we found them to very courteous and gentle, as your Maiestie shal understand by the successe. To the intent we might send them of our things, which the Indians commonly desire and esteeme, as sheetes of paper, glasses, bells, and such like trifles; we sent a young man one of our Mariners ashore, who swimming towards them, & being within 3. or 4. yards of the shoare, not trusting them, cast the things upon the shoare; but seeking afterwards to returne, he was with such violence of the waves beaten upon the shoare, that he was so bruised that he lay there almost dead: which the Indians perceiving, ranne to catch him, and drawing him out, they carried him a little way off from the sea. The yong man perceiving they caried him, being at the first dismaied, began then greatly to feare, and cried out piteously: likewise did the Indians which did accompany him, going about to cheere him and to give him courage, and then setting him on the ground at the foote of a litle hil against the sunne, they began to behold him with great admiration, marveiling at the whitenesse of his flesh: and putting off his clothes, they made him warme at a great fire, not without our great feare which remayned in the boat, that they would have rosted him at that fire, and have eaten him. The young man having recovered his strength, and having stayed a while with them, shewed them by signes that he was desirous to returne to the ship: and they with great love clapping him fast about with many imbracings, accom-

panying him unto the sea, and to put him in more assurance, leaving him alone, went unto a high ground and stood there, beholding him until he was entred into the boate. This yong man observed, as we did also, that these are of colour inclining to Blacke as the other were, with their flesh very shining, of meane stature, handsome visage, and delicate limmes, and of very little strength, but of prompt wit: farther we observed not. . . .”

Proceeding still farther northward, Verrazzano coasted the shores of Virginia and Maryland, looked in at the bay of New York, and following the coast of Rhode Island, entered the harbor of Newport, where he rested at anchor for fifteen days. Everywhere the natives welcomed the French with signs of great joy and friendship. But after leaving the harbor of Newport the voyagers noted a decided change in the attitude of the natives. The Indians were willing enough to trade, but showed a determination to have no further intercourse with the strangers. At times the attempts of the French to land were met with wild war-whoops and showers of arrows which speedily drove them back to their ship. Coasting the shores of Maine, Verrazzano pursued his voyage as far north as Newfoundland. His supplies now beginning to run short, he set sail for France, and cast anchor in the harbor of Dieppe early in July. There on July 8, 1524, he wrote and dispatched to the King, Francis I., “the earliest description known to exist of the shores of the United States.”<sup>4</sup>

Verrazzano was eager to return to the New World, plant a colony there, and become the bearer of the Christian religion to the savage tribes of America. But the situation of

---

<sup>4</sup> The authorities for Verrazzano's voyage are his letter of July 8, 1524, to the King, a map of the world drawn by his brother in 1529, and certain references to his voyage in early French, Spanish, Portuguese and English writers. Within recent years the authenticity of Verrazzano's letter has been called into question. It has been asserted that the letter is a forgery, ingeniously prepared in France with the connivance of the King to serve as a basis for a claim to

territory in America, and that Verrazzano never came to America at all.

The original of Verrazzano's letter to the King is not known to be in existence. There are two copies of it extant, both of which are Italian translations. One of these was printed by Ramusio in 1556. Ramusio asserts that he had conversed with many persons who had known Verrazzano, and he prints a paper in which Verrazzano's voyage is mentioned by a contemporary. Parkman: *The Pioneers of France in the New World*, p. 231-32. (Note.)

From Ramusio's copy Hakluyt made the English translation for his "Divers Voyages," published in 1582. Hakluyt also makes several references to Verrazzano's discoveries in the dedication to his "Divers Voyages" and in his "Discourse on Western Planting."—Winsor: *Narrative and Critical History of America*, IV., 17.

The other copy of Verrazzano's letter was found in the Strozzi Library in Florence and published with an English translation by the New York Historical Society in 1841. Along with this copy was found a letter written from Lyons, Aug. 4, 1524, by Fernando Carli to his father in Florence. Carli writes of the arrival of Verrazzano at Dieppe and sends a copy in Italian of his account of his voyage which Carli thought would interest the people of the navigator's native city.—Winsor: *Nar. and Crit. Hist.* IV., 17.

In 1529, Hieronimo da Verrazzano, brother of Giovanni da Verrazzano, made a large map of the world, now preserved in the College of the Propaganda at Rome, on which the discoveries of Verrazzano are laid down. That part of North America explored by him bears the following legend: "Verrazzano, or New Gaul, which was discovered five years ago by Giovanni da Verrazzano, of Florence, by the order and command of the most Christian King of France."—Winsor: *Nar. and Crit. Hist.* IV., 18-19.

There are numerous references to Verrazzano's voyage in the early Spanish, Portuguese, French, and English authorities. Among them is a letter from the Portuguese ambassador to France written in the spring of 1523 which shows that Verrazzano had announced his intention of making a voyage to "Cathay." References to the fact that he did actually make such a voyage are found in the writings of historians as early as 1537.—Parkman: *The Pioneers of France in the New World*, 232. (Note.)

The first suggestion that the letter of July 8, 1524, was not genuine was made by Mr. Buckingham Smith in a paper which he read before the New York Historical Society in October, 1864. This view was further supported by Henry C. Murphy, in his "Voyage of Verrazzano," published in 1875, whose work is the strongest statement of the case against Verrazzano. Its chief importance arises from the fact that it caused Mr. Bancroft to omit any reference to Verrazzano's voyage in his last revision of his "History of the United States."

Justin Winsor reviews the entire controversy in the fourth volume of his "*Narrative and Critical History of America*," and seems effectually to dispose of the arguments of Mr. Murphy. John Fiske also declares that "Mr. Murphy's conclusions have not been generally sustained."—*Discovery of America*, II., 493 (Note). Since the publication of Murphy's work, new evidence discovered in European archives still further substantiates the genuineness of the Verrazzano letter, so that at present the conclusion of Francis Parkman appears to represent generally the attitude of modern investigators and historians. Says he, after reviewing the controversy, "A careful examination of these various writings convinces me that the evidence in favor of the voyage of Verrazzano is far stronger than the evidence against it."—*Pioneers of France in The New World*, 232 (Note).



France at that time was unfavorable. "The year of his voyage," says Parkman, "was to France a year of disasters—defeat in Italy, the loss of Milan, the death of the heroic Bayard; and, while Verrazzano was writing his narrative at Dieppe, the traitor Bourbon was invading Provence. Preparation, too, was soon on foot for the expedition which, a few months later, ended in the captivity of Francis on the field of Pavia. Without a King, without an army, without money, convulsed within, and threatened from without, France after that humiliation was in no condition to renew her transatlantic enterprise."<sup>5</sup>

We know but little of Verrazzano's subsequent career, and his fate is involved in much obscurity. Ramusio states that he was killed and eaten by savages; while Biddle thinks that it is impossible from references in Hakluyt, to withstand the conviction that Verrazzano later entered the service of Henry VIII of England. But the best modern opinion, based on documents recently brought to light, is that, in 1527, he was captured by the Spaniards and condemned and hanged as a pirate. Still, as another writer has said, "All that we know with certainty is, that one great action distinguished him from the mass of adventures, in an age which had produced a Columbus and a Cabot; while doubt and mystery have enveloped the rest of his career, leaving us uncertain whether we should lament the untimely fate which gave him a prey to the barbarous appetite of cannibals, or execrate the ingratitude which compelled him to sacrifice to a struggle with the daily necessities of life, a mind formed for daring and successful adventure."<sup>6</sup>

---

<sup>5</sup>Parkman: *The Pioneers of France in the New World*, 201.

<sup>6</sup>Green, George W.: "Life and Voyages of Verrazzano," *North American Review*, October, 1837.

## First Secession Flag

---

### The Raising and Taking Down of the Flag at Ansonville in February, 1861

---

By GENERAL W. A. SMITH.

---

In Ansonville, North Carolina, on the morning of the second of February, 1861, the citizens of the village beheld a flag, whose folds were flapping in the wind blowing from the Southeast betokening rain and brewing up foul, disagreeable weather, foreshadowing dark, impending war clouds.

On and before February 1st, seven States had passed ordinances of secession from the Union, and withdrawn their Congressional delegations from Washington. South Carolina led on December 20, 1860. Mississippi followed January 7, 1861; Florida, January 10, 1861; Alabama, January 11, 1861; Georgia, January 19, 1861; Louisiana, January 26, 1861; Texas, February 1, 1861.

February 1st the electric telegraph flashed over the land that Texas had joined her Southern sisters, which so enthused Adolphus A. Waddell, John B. Waddell, W. A. Threadgill and Jas. M. Wright that they determined to become more active in the cause of secession. These young men of the village were very desirous to have North Carolina follow the seven States, and during the night of February 1st prepared a flag which they hoped would prove an incentive and aid in determining the State of North Carolina to secede from the Union. Having no bunting, they made the flag of calico, with two large stars at the head marked S. C. and Miss., abbreviations for South Carolina and Mississippi, the first two States severing their relations with Washington. From these stars led stripes of alternating red, white and blue; and in the lower corner at the tail end was another star of like proportions half turned down marked N. C., representing North Carolina faint and drooping, hanging her head in dishonor,

shame and disgrace. In large letters at the top of the flag was the word "Secession." Underneath was this motto: "Resistance to Oppression is in Obedience to God."

This flag was fashioned in the Garrett store after business hours. On the opposite side of the street was the wooden framework of an unfinished store. The flag, size 6x9 feet was attached to a pole and securely fastened to the studding and rafters forming the comb of this building.

On the morning of the 2nd of February the citizens of the village took notice of this Secession flag which had been given to the breeze during the dark hours of the night. Almost unanimous was the sentiment of opposition. Indignation prevailed and talk of cutting it down freely indulged, the makers not daring to disclose themselves. Two or three ratified the act and commended the unknown makers, and as the day wore on a few were converted, declaring themselves, and were added to the number of Secessionists. Among these was Prof. Gilliam, a teacher in the college, from the State of Virginia. Emboldened by these accessions, the makers of the flag openly avowed their sentiments and their handiwork in fashioning the flag.

Misses Kate Smith and Winnie Watkins made four rosettes of silk and pinned them on the lapels of the makers of the flag, which, said one of them, "made us very proud, and we walked the streets as vain as strutting peacocks."

During the night of the 2nd, Col. John J. Colson and Washington Threadgill climbed to the comb of the storehouse frame, cut the fastenings, and the flag fell to the sidewalk. In descending, Colonel Colson's foot slipped and he fell 10 to 15 feet, with only a slight sprain, landing on his feet. Dr. William A. Ingram, in his office near by, heard the noise and came out to ascertain the cause. Colson, pointing to the flag, said, "We cut down that d——d Secession flag." Doctor Ingram replied, "You did right. It ought not to have been made and put up to insult the intelligence of the community. I'll never tell who did it." He respected his word. This flag was never more seen.

The morning of the 3rd dawned fair. Balmy breezes from the South stirred the hot blood of the young Secessionists of both genders to indignation and contempt of the dastardly act, on finding the flag of their pride torn down and destroyed under the cover of darkness. Undismayed, bunting was procured, taken to the residence of Mrs. Garrett, an enthusiast in the cause of secession. She, assisted by the young ladies of the village, made a larger flag, similar in design, and with like stars and same motto. This flag was unfurled in the afternoon at the same place. Seemingly the destruction of the flag added to the number of Secessionists, for believing in a square deal the people condemned the dastardly act of tearing it down under the cover of darkness. A few walked underneath its folds with hats off, others and far the greater number, would not pass underneath or even allow its shadow to fall on them.

News of the first Secession flag raised and destroyed, and the making of another, larger and of finer material having been made and given to the breeze, was circulated in the country. A large number of citizens assembled in the village the afternoon of the 3d of February, many, very many, approving the destruction of the first flag, taking this one down and tearing "the damn Secession rag to pieces."

One of the makers of the original flag, and the only one now living, from whom many of the facts herein set down were obtained, writing of the occasion, says: "About ten young men fell in with us, all armed with guns, and told the crowd that we would fight for that flag, and this was a free country, and that it should not be torn down." Professor Gilliam was in the crowd, and was called on for a speech. Standing above the crowd, he made a fine, instructive and impressive address in favor of secession, arraiguing the North for its aggressions against the South, and their repudiation of the States' rights, for their contempt for the Constitution—that sacred bond of Union—saying: "By the treaty of Paris, made in 1783, England acknowledged the independence of the

thirteen colonies by name, and each one became a sovereign, independent State"; that these States entered into a Union forming the United States of America by their own choice and motion, each one reserving its independence, and its State right to withdraw from the Union when laws adverse and hurtful to its welfare should be made by the General Congress; that the Northern States, being commercial and manufacturing, antagonized the agricultural Southern States, whose people were content and prosperous, and therefore envied; that law after law had been enacted inimical to our welfare, encroachment after encroachment was borne by the South, compromise after compromise was broken and nullified by the States of the North, dominated by a party which declared the Constitution—that sacred bond of Union—"was in league with the devil and a covenant of hell"; that our only safety lay in separation and withdrawing from a compact repeatedly broken; that having reserved the right to secede, we would withdraw in peace; that they would not attempt coercion; they would not dare bring on a fratricidal war; they would not dare bring on a war among brothers, for that would mean a war to the knife—a war in which no quarter would be shown; that they would not dare attempt to make vassals of free and independent States.

"No," said he, "we will go in peace and pursue our own ideas of progress and advancement and live under laws enacted by ourselves, conducive to our own interest and to our happiness"; that the North were merchants and shoemakers, who would not fight; they were shade-seekers and counter-jumpers, unacquainted with firearms, inexperienced in horsemanship and manly out-of-door sports; no, they would not dare meet the chivalry of the South on the battlefield. "Isn't the Lord on our side, the side of equity, justice and right? He says in holy writ: 'Five shall chase an hundred, and an hundred shall put ten thousand to flight'; and, again, 'the sound of a leaf shall chase them.' I will drink all the blood shed by the pusillanimous abolitionists." Turning to the



little band under arms, he commended the makers of the flag and the heroism behind it, and fully endorsed the motto, "Resistance to oppression is in obedience to God."

He closed with discreet, well-chosen phrases complimentary to those whose patriotic sentiments were opposed to secession and to the raising of the flag, advising calmness and due consideration of the opinion of others who differed with them; advising against rashness and hasty action, counseling due deliberation, and, withal, admonishing them to maintain the dignity of the law and preserve the reputation of the good people of the community by keeping the peace.

His speech had a very happy effect. It emphasized and clarified the intellectual vision of his audience, and one by one they wended their way home with thoughtful mien and contemplative spirit.

Nevertheless, the flag was guarded that night and every night until the sentiment against it had cooled down. Day by day accessions were made of those of secession aspiration and patriotic sentiments. No further attempts were made against the flag.

Cheered only by the smiles of the young ladies and daily accessions of young manhood, the Secessionists proposed placing the flag in a more conspicuous position. By permission of Colonel Colson (they knew not that he had cut down and destroyed the first flag), they procured from his land a very tall, beautifully straight, but small pine, upward of 80 feet long. The bark was peeled off and the long tapering white pole was raised in front of the college building amidst the jibes of observers on the one hand, and the cheers of the many boy participants on the other. The flag was then run up to the top of the pole by the young hot-bloods with no thought that it foreshadowed four long years of disastrous war and devastation of the fair Southland. The older and old men did not approve of the sentiments typified by this secession flag. They deemed it wrong, rash and inconsiderate. Col. William G. Smith, William Little, Dr. John B. Cortrell and others

spoke their disapproval of this exhibition of disloyalty to the Union. These old gentlemen thoroughly believed in the right of a State to withdraw from the Union, a right guaranteed North Carolina by the Congress of the United States before she entered the Union, but did not think secession the proper remedy to correct the wrongs which the North was perpetrating against the South and the whole body politic. Therefore, these men opposed the raising of this secession flag by the hot-headed, fire-eating boys, who gave little heed to the counsel of the old and no thought to the responsibilities of the future. These older men said: "Fight for our rights if needs must, but fight in the Union, under the flag made glorious by the blood of our Revolutionary fathers—the flag of love and veneration—the stars and stripes." Had their advice been taken and followed, the North would not have been able to stir the hearts of their people so profoundly and rouse them to unanimity against the South by the heartrending but courageous cry, "The Union and Old Glory Forever."

Early in February the question of calling a convention for the purpose of passing an ordinance of secession was defeated by the people by a majority of 30,000, indisputable evidence that the prevailing sentiment in North Carolina was for the Union. When President Lincoln called for troops to coerce the seceding States back into the Union, and the question again submitted, it was ratified almost unanimously; for he was transcending his authority, attempting to force an independent State and free people to live under laws inimical to their welfare. Sentiment crystalizes rapidly in times of great excitement, even on questions of momentous issue.

On the 20th of May North Carolina elected to stand with her sister Southern States in defense of her rights by passing the ordinance of secession. Then the turned down star, representing North Carolina, was displayed in full; complete, strong and clear. As one man her sons sprang to arms and attested her devotion by giving 130,000 of her bravest to the cause, more than 40,000 of whom never came back, whose

blood flowed out, enriched and made sacred the soil of many States. From the war records we know more men fell in battle from North Carolina than from any three other States, a fact of pride, not of boast. The secession of North Carolina was preceded by Virginia, April 17, 1861; by Arkansas May 6, 1861, and followed by Tennessee June 5, 1861.

When the Anson Guards, which was the first company in the State to offer its services to Governor Ellis, left for the front this secession flag was committed to John Birdsong Waddell, a member of said company, to be by him presented to Governor Ellis. John Birdsong Waddell was the great grandson of John Birdsong, of Chatham County, who was noted for his patriotism in the day "that tried men's souls," was prominent in the councils of the colony. He was a delegate at Hillsboro, August 21, 1775, and member of Congress at Halifax November 12, 1776.

Search among the State archives so far has failed to find this flag. This is not surprising, however, considering an army under General William T. Sherman, famed by the devastated homes on his march to the sea, evidenced by the blackened chimneys standing as monuments amid waste and desolation wrought by his army.

The sentiment against the secession flag, sometimes designated "Secesh" flag, was violent and uncompromising. Many would not walk under its folds nor allow its shadows to fall on them, often crossing the street to avoid the possibility of being contaminated thereby. These were probably actuated by similar feelings which animated the ladies of New Orleans, who refused to walk under the Federal flag displayed by the order of B. F. Butler, known to the South and to history as "Beast" Butler and "Spoon" Butler. Sam Christian, a prominent citizen, drove five miles out of his way going to Wadesboro, the county's capital, rather than pass underneath its folds; and the Reverend William (Uncle Billy) Knight refused to visit the village during his life because of his dislike and contempt for the secession sentiment manifested by "that hole,"

as he expressed it. In the language of the only one of the immortal four now living, "Old Aunt Polly Ingram came to Ansonville to shop. She always traded with me. On entering the store she noticed the beautiful rosette on my coat lapel and she blessed me out and took herself across the street to Garrett's store. There she saw W. A. Threadgill with a rosette on. In no gentle language she gave him a piece of her mind, and out she came. Indignant and in disgust, she left the village and drove to Wadesboro, ten miles distant, and did her shopping."

## Genealogical Department

---

### Edgecombe County Records—Farmer

---

Compiled by SYBIL HYATT, Kinston, N. C.

---

#### GENERATION I—ISAAC FARMER, SENIOR.

Colonial Records, Vol. IV, page 644. Council held at Edenton, Nov. 16, 1743. The following persons were admitted to prove their Rights in order to their taking up of land—viz: Isaac Farmer, Edgecombe, 3 whites.

Isaac Farmer md. Elizabeth. Their son, Samuel, was born May 13, 1754. Other sons were Isaac and Benjamin. He died prior to 1790.

Deed. Feb. 25, 1770. Isaac Farmer, Senr. to Isaac Farmer, Junr., 200 acres, north side of Toisnot. Test: William Blackburn, Zachariah Lee, Jesse Farmer.

---

#### GENERATION II—SAMUEL AND ISAAC FARMER, JUNIOR.

Samuel Farmer md. Jerusha Tyson, b. Feb. 20, 1756, daughter of Aaron and Alsey Tyson. Their son, Moses, was born July 11, 1791.

Will. Samuel Farmer. March 21, 1814. August Court, 1817. Sons: Samuel, Moses (tract on Miry Swamp called Parish place), Isaac (land I live on at his mother's death). Daughters: Rhoda Shary, Anna Sharp. Wife: Jerusha. Rest of estate to be equally divided between wife and all other children. Executors: Sons, Samuel and Moses. Test: J. Farmer, Isaac Farmer. Clerk of the Court: E. Hall.

Will. Isaac Farmer. Nov. 13, 1800. Feb. Court, 1805. Sons: John (plantation I now live on, 200 acres, and 200 acres adjoining), Josiah, Isaac, Azeal Barnes. Daughter: Patience. Wife: Not named, her interest to go at death to



the child she is supposed to be pregnant with, and also to that child the land John Ross lives on. "Remainder of estate to be divided among all my children. The property my wife brought with her when we were married may be sold to pay her debts, and the remainder to be her right." Executors: Brother, Benjamin Farmer; son, Azeal Farmer. Test: Wm. Blackburn, William Dew, Jeremiah Baleman. Clerk of the Court: E. Hall.

Deed of gift. Jan. 12, 1804. Isaac Farmer to daughter, Bashaba Beal, of Johnston Co., negro girl.

Deed of gift. Dated Mar. 15, 1800. Recorded May Court, 1805. Isaac Farmer to son, John Farmer, "plantation I live on," but if John dies without will or sale it goes to son Isaac.

Deed of Gift. Oct. 16, 1802. Isaac Farmer to daughter, Patsey Robbins, one negro girl Penny. Test: Jesse Farmer, Elizabeth Thomas.

---

#### GENERATION III—MOSES FARMER.

Moses Farmer md. 1st Elizabeth Dew, b. April 9, 1796, daughter of John and Sally Dew. Their children were Larry Dew Farmer, b. Oct. 31, 1816, and Moses Farmer, b. Oct. 23, 1829. Moses Farmer (III) md. 2d Elizabeth Barnes, b. April 15, 1815 (a niece of his first wife), daughter of John Barnes and Mary Dew. Their children were: Samuel Barnes Farmer, b. Dec. 20, 1835; Jerusha Farmer, b. Jan. 16, 1838, Walter Farmer, b. Sept. 9, 1844 (killed at Appomattox).

---

#### GENERATION IV—JERUSHA FARMER (WOODARD).

Jerusha Farmer md. in 1856, William Woodard. The following sons survive them: Walter F. Woodard, b. Sept. 14, 1864; James E. J. Woodard, b. Oct. 31, 1866; David Woodard, b. March 8, 1869; Charles Warren Woodard, b. Aug. 16, 1874.

A Century of Population Growth (1790-1800) states that in 1790 there were in the United States 136 families (Farmer, Farmar, Farmor) of 616 persons, 42 families in Virginia, 29 in North Carolina, 11 in South Carolina, 8 in Maine, 8 in Vermont, 20 in Massachusetts, 4 in Connecticut, 2 in New York, 5 in Pennsylvania, 7 in Maryland. In North Carolina were the following heads of families: Anson Co., James; Bertie Co., James, Joseph; Caswell Co., Cassandra, William, Dan'l, Joseph, Thomas, Sr.; Dobbs Co., Jesse; Edgecombe Co., Benjamin, Isaac, Jesse, Joseph, Joseph, Joshua, Samnis (Samuel), Thomas; Franklin Co., John; Granville Co., Sarah, John, Othniel; Johnston Co., Nicholas, William; Orange Co., Thomas; Randolph Co., Frederick, John; Rutherford Co., Nathan; Stokes Co., John; Wilkes Co., Thomas.

---

### Wills—Edgecombe County

Thomas Farmer. Nov. 16, 1784. Feb. Court, 1785. Sons: Thomas ("plantation I now live on"), Jesse and Joseph ("new entered land"). Perishable estate to be sold and equally divided between all my children. Executors: Joshua Farmer, Joseph Farmer. Test: Joshua Farmer, Aziel Barnes, Daniel Highsmith. Clerk of the Court: Edward Hall.

Jesse Farmer. July 9, 1808. August Court, 1812. Wife: not named (lend to her 1/3 "manner plantation I live on" and one negro man, 2 negro women, etc., at her death or marriage to son, Joseph Farmer), son, Joseph Farmer ("all the rest"). Executors: Friend, Charles Coleman; son, Joseph Farmer. Clerk of the Court: E. Hall.

Benjamin Farmer. March 16, 1825. Feb. Court, 1827. Wife: Elizabeth ("including the Deloach tract"). Sons: William (land on north side of Hominy Swamp), Braswell (214 acres, north side of Toisnot Swamp, joining Moses Farmer and Arthur D. Farmer, "it being part of a tract of land

drawn by me and my wife Elizabeth by death of William Dew), Absalom, Dew, Jacob, Arthur D., William D. Daughters: Sally Hollowell, Beedy White, Nancy Dew, Elizabeth Amason. Other legatees: Heirs of John Barnes (Toit, Thomas, Betsy, Sally, Beedy, Dempsey and Nancy). Executor: William D. Farmer. Test: Isaac F. Wood, Hansel D. Griffith.

Elizabeth Farmer. January 29, 1844. Nov. Court, 1852. Daughter: Elizabeth Amason ("tract north side Toisnot Swamp; ("joining Moses Farmer and Arthur D. Farmer, deceased, it being part of land fallen to me by the death of my brother, William Dew"). Rest to be sold and divided between lawful heirs. Executor: Friend, Larry D. Farmer. Test: Jas. D. Barnes, Larry Dew. Clerk of the Court: Jno. Norfleet.

---

### Conveyances

Oct. 1, 1765. Joshua Lee. Deed of Gift to son-in-law, Thos. Farmer, "on little swamp."

March 2, 1761. John Stevens to Isaac Farmer, north side of Toisnot Swamp.

Sept. 13, 1773. Richard Bracewell of Dobbs Co. to Thomas Farmer of Edgecombe. Heired from father Richard Bracewell, Senior. Hatcher Swamp.

July 4, 1778. Thomas Farmer to Solomon Bracewell. Grant to William McDaid, August 4, 1762, from him to Ponder, from Ponder to Richard Bracewell, Senior, and descended to son, Richard Bracewell, Junr., and sold by him to Thomas Farmer.

Jan. 14, 1778. William Hatcher, Junr., to Jesse Farmer, south side of Toisnot Swamp. Test: George Ezell, Isaac Farmer, Benjamin Farmer.

Jan. 30, 1779. William Gay to Joseph Farmer. Town Creek.

March 12, 1782. Joshua Morris to Samuel Farmer. On Hominy Swamp. Grant to Thomas Hall, 1761. Test: Wm. Blackburn, Joseph Farmer, Isaac Farmer.

March 30, 1782. Jesse Farmer to Benjamin Farmer. Miry Swamp. Test: Isaac Farmer, Joseph Farmer.

April 11, 1783. Samuel Farmer to Isaac Farmer, north side of Toisnot Swamp. Test: Joseph Farmer, Benjamin Farmer.

Nov. 16, 1784. Thomas Farmer to son, Joshua. Deed of gift, Little Swamp, granted to Thomas Farmer by Joshua Lee in 1765. Test: Azial Barnes, Thomas Farmer, Senior.

Jan. 1, 1785. Salathiel Parish to Samuel Farmer. On Miery Branch. Signed: Salathiel Parrish, Sukey Parrish. Test: Jesse Farmer, Benjamin Farmer.

Sept. 29, 1785. John Deloach to Benjamin Farmer. On Hominy Swamp. Test: Jesse Farmer, Isaac Farmer.

June 29, 1788. Elisha Ellis to Jesse Farmer.

Jan. 30, 1790. Joshua Farmer and his wife Susanner, to James Barran, west side Great Branch.

Feb. 1, 1790. Thomas Farmer and his wife, Elizabeth, to James Barran, west side Great Branch.

December 5, 1791. Joseph Farmer to William White.

Dec. 8, 1792. Asa Arnold to Jesse Farmer.

March 2, 1793. Ephriam Philips to Joseph Farmer.

Dec. 7, 1793. Andrew Greer to Benjamin Farmer.

Nov. Court, 1795. Feb. 28, 1796. Joseph Farmer, dec'd. Infant sons, Asia, Enos, Joseph.

Feb. 6, 1798. John Mewborn to Benjamin Farmer. Hominy Swamp. Grant to William Forkes, Apr. 1, 1763.

Dec. 2, 1802. Deed of Gift. Jesse Farmer to son, Joseph Farmer.

Dec. 21, 1802. Deed of Gift. Jesse Farmer to son, Joseph Farmer.

Feb. 9, 1805. Benjamin Farmer to Absalom Farmer. Grant to William Folk's corner, Apr. 1, 1763.

1806. Joseph Farmer sold out to Jesse Farmer, it seems, and probably moved.

October 1, 1807. Joseph Farmer to Jacob Horn. Joins Isaac Farmer, dec'd.

Jan. 1, 1807. Benjamin Farmer and Elizabeth, his wife, to Dew Farmer. Hominy Swamp.

Jan. 6, 1808. Elizabeth Farmer of Edgecombe; John Walton of Oglethorpe, Ga.; Micajah Pettiwary and Sarah, his wife of Edgecombe to Enos Tart. Toisnot Swamp.

Mch. 15, 1811. Enos Farmer to Zilpha Farmer.

March 12, 1809. Jesse Farmer to son, Joseph Farmer. Deed of gift. 3 negroes.

March 12, 1809. Jesse Farmer to granddaughter, Eliza Farmer. Deed of Gift. One negro boy child 5 mo. old.

Mch. 23, 1812. Anna Law of Williamson Co., Tenn. Appoints Absalom Farmer, attorney, "to sell my right of dower to certain parcel in Wayne Co." On Black Creek.

Oct. 24, 1812. Amos Johnston to Isaac Farmer. Town Creek.

Dec. 15, 1812. Asa Farmer to Joseph Farmer.

Feb. 22, 1813. William Coppage, Aseal Farmer and Martin Thorne to Benjamin Sharp. Negro boy.

Aug. 22, 1814. Aseal Farmer, and Charlotte Farmer, Martin Thorn and Polly Thorn appoint Benjamin Grantham attorney to sell tract in Northumberland Co., Va., which descended to wives by brother, Griffin Coppage, died intestate.

March 25, 1814. Senath Farmer to Willie Coleman, on Contentnea Creek. Bequeathed to Senath and her two brothers, Zepthah and John Bearfoot by their grandfather, Zepthah Bearfoot, Senr., dec'd. Fell to her on division.

August 30, 1815. Division of Arthur Dew No. 1. Polly Barnes' heirs. No. 2, William Dew. No. 3, Elizabeth Farmer. No. 4, John Dew's heirs. No. 5, Martha Simms. No. 6, Arthur Dew.

Feb. 22, 1816. Joseph Farmer to William Ellis. Contentnea Creek and Tarborough Road.



March 18, 1816. Joseph Farmer to Joseph Barnes. Hominy Swamp. Test: Joseph Barnes, Jesse Barnes.

Dec. 13, 1815. John Barnes, Nancy Farmer and Thomas Barnes to Arthur Dew. Interest in land inherited from grandfather, Arthur Dew.

Feb. 22, 1817. Samuel Farmer to Moses Farmer.

Dec. 29, 1817. Samuel Farmer to Washton Killibrew. Tyancocoa Swamp. Fell to Moses More from death of his brother, John Moore. Fell to Wanecy Waller by said John Moore, with division not made.

Feb. 22, 1817. Samuel Farmer to Isaac Farmer, Jr. After the death of said Samuel Farmer and wife, Jerusha. Hominy Swamp. Granted to Thomas Hall, March 9, 1761.

Feb. 22, 1820. Jacob Farmer to Moses Farmer.

April 5, 1821. Zilpha Farmer to son, Joseph Farmer. Deed of gift.

Oct., 1822. Division of lands of William Dew, dec'd. Heirs of John Dew, Elizabeth Farmer, Mary Barnes' heirs, Martha Simms' heirs.

Feb. 28, 1823. Benjamin Farmer and Elizabeth, his wife, to the heirs of John Dew, dec'd, Mary Barnes, Jonathan Dew, John Dew, Larry Dew, David Dew, Teresa Ellis, Duncan Dew, Elizabeth Farmer, Patsy Rountree, Sally Carpenter, Nancy Wiggins, Beedy Wilkinson. "Interest we drew in a division of Arthur Dew, dec'd, our father." Lot No. 3. Paid for by William Dew.

June 4, 1823. Deed of Gift. Benjamin Farmer to grandchildren, Thomas and Elizabeth Barnes, Sally Barnes, Beedy Barnes, Dempsey Barnes, Nancy Barnes.

May 25, 1824. Jubal Carpenter and Sally, his wife of Greene Co., Ala., to Moses Farmer. Interest in land heired from William Dew.

May 25, 1824. Jubal Carpenter and Sally, his wife of Greene Co., Ala. Tract fell to us by death of father, John Dew.

Feb. 4, 1824. John Dew of Cumberland Co. Lands heired from William Dew.

Feb. 23, 1824. Benjamin Wilkinson and wife, Beedy (Obedience) to Moses Farmer. Interest in estate of William Dew.

Aug. 1, 1823. Jonathan Dew, Mary Barnes, Larry Dew and David Dew to Moses Farmer. All right in lands which fell by the death of William Dew. North Toisnot Swamp.

May 20, 1824. Benjamin Farmer to daughter, Nancy Dew and her husband Jonathan Dew. Deed of gift.

Aug. 21, 1824. Benjamin Farmer to son William Farmer.

Nov. 19, 1824. Willie Rountree and Patsy, his wife, to Moses Farmer, right in lands from William Dew by heirship.

March 16, 1825. Benjamin Farmer and Elizabeth, his wife to son, Arthur D. Farmer. Deed of Gift. Tract fell to them by death of William Dew.

Aug. 16, 1827. William D. Farmer, executor of Benjamin Farmer and Elizabeth Farmer, widow of said dec'd, to Larry Dew,  $\frac{1}{4}$  of Amason tract, which fell to said Elizabeth by death of William Dew.

Mr. Larry Dew Farmer used to say there were three distinct sets of Farmers in Edgecombe County who were not related.



DATE DUE

<http://stores.ebay.com/Ancestry-Found>

JAN 17 1979  
JAN 17 1979

RESTRICTED TO USE IN LIBRARY

GAYLORD

PRINTED IN U.S.A.

<http://stores.ebay.com/Ancestry-Found>



